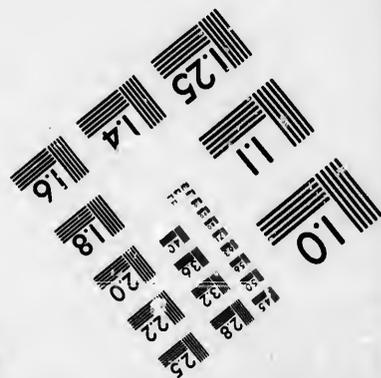
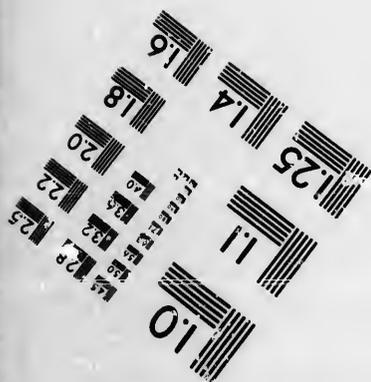
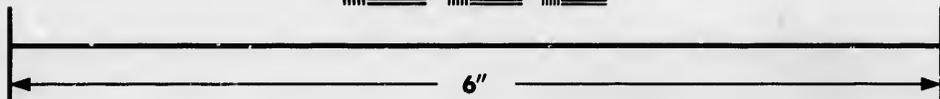
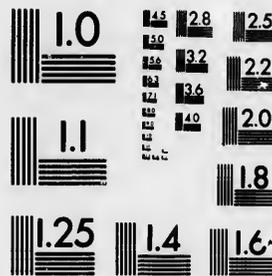


**IMAGE EVALUATION
TEST TARGET (MT-3)**



**Photographic
Sciences
Corporation**

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503

**CIHM/ICMH
Microfiche
Series.**

**CIHM/ICMH
Collection de
microfiches.**



Canadian Institute for Historical Microreproductions / Institut canadien de microreproductions historiques

© 1985

Technical and Bibliographic Notes/Notes techniques et bibliographiques

The Institute has attempted to obtain the best original copy available for filming. Features of this copy which may be bibliographically unique, which may alter any of the images in the reproduction, or which may significantly change the usual method of filming, are checked below.

L'Institut a microfilmé le meilleur exemplaire qu'il lui a été possible de se procurer. Les détails de cet exemplaire qui sont peut-être uniques du point de vue bibliographique, qui peuvent modifier une image reproduite, ou qui peuvent exiger une modification dans la méthode normale de filmage sont indiqués ci-dessous.

- | | |
|--|--|
| <input type="checkbox"/> Coloured covers/
Couverture de couleur | <input type="checkbox"/> Coloured pages/
Pages de couleur |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Covers damaged/
Couverture endommagée | <input type="checkbox"/> Pages damaged/
Pages endommagées |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Covers restored and/or laminated/
Couverture restaurée et/ou pelliculée | <input type="checkbox"/> Pages restored and/or laminated/
Pages restaurées et/ou pelliculées |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Cover title missing/
Le titre de couverture manque | <input checked="" type="checkbox"/> Pages discoloured, stained or foxed/
Pages décolorées, tachetées ou piquées |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Coloured maps/
Cartes géographiques en couleur | <input type="checkbox"/> Pages detached/
Pages détachées |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Coloured ink (i.e. other than blue or black)/
Encre de couleur (i.e. autre que bleue ou noire) | <input checked="" type="checkbox"/> Showthrough/
Transparence |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Coloured plates and/or illustrations/
Planches et/ou illustrations en couleur | <input type="checkbox"/> Quality of print varies/
Qualité inégale de l'impression |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Bound with other material/
Relié avec d'autres documents | <input type="checkbox"/> Includes supplementary material/
Comprend du matériel supplémentaire |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Tight binding may cause shadows or distortion
along interior margin/
La reliure serrée peut causer de l'ombre ou de la
distorsion le long de la marge intérieure | <input type="checkbox"/> Only edition available/
Seule édition disponible |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Blank leaves added during restoration may
appear within the text. Whenever possible, these
have been omitted from filming/
Il se peut que certaines pages blanches ajoutées
lors d'une restauration apparaissent dans le texte,
mais, lorsque cela était possible, ces pages n'ont
pas été filmées. | <input type="checkbox"/> Pages wholly or partially obscured by errata
slips, tissues, etc., have been refilmed to
ensure the best possible image/
Les pages totalement ou partiellement
obscurcies par un feuillet d'errata, une pelure,
etc., ont été filmées à nouveau de façon à
obtenir la meilleure image possible. |
| <input checked="" type="checkbox"/> Additional comments:/
Commentaires supplémentaires: | Various pagings. Wrinkled pages may film slightly out of focus. |

This item is filmed at the reduction ratio checked below/
Ce document est filmé au taux de réduction indiqué ci-dessous.

10X	14X	18X	22X	26X	30X
<input type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input checked="" type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>
12X	16X	20X	24X	28X	32X

The copy filmed here has been reproduced thanks to the generosity of:

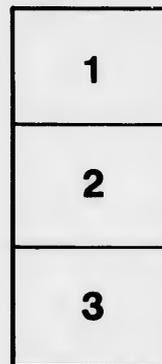
Library of the Public
Archives of Canada

The images appearing here are the best quality possible considering the condition and legibility of the original copy and in keeping with the filming contract specifications.

Original copies in printed paper covers are filmed beginning with the front cover and ending on the last page with a printed or illustrated impression, or the back cover when appropriate. All other original copies are filmed beginning on the first page with a printed or illustrated impression, and ending on the last page with a printed or illustrated impression.

The last recorded frame on each microfiche shall contain the symbol \rightarrow (meaning "CONTINUED"), or the symbol ∇ (meaning "END"), whichever applies.

Maps, plates, charts, etc., may be filmed at different reduction ratios. Those too large to be entirely included in one exposure are filmed beginning in the upper left hand corner, left to right and top to bottom, as many frames as required. The following diagrams illustrate the method:



L'exemplaire filmé fut reproduit grâce à la générosité de:

La bibliothèque des Archives
publiques du Canada

Les images suivantes ont été reproduites avec le plus grand soin, compte tenu de la condition et de la netteté de l'exemplaire filmé, et en conformité avec les conditions du contrat de filmage.

Les exemplaires originaux dont la couverture en papier est imprimée sont filmés en commençant par le premier plat et en terminant soit par la dernière page qui comporte une empreinte d'impression ou d'illustration, soit par le second plat, selon le cas. Tous les autres exemplaires originaux sont filmés en commençant par la première page qui comporte une empreinte d'impression ou d'illustration et en terminant par la dernière page qui comporte une telle empreinte.

Un des symboles suivants apparaîtra sur la dernière image de chaque microfiche, selon le cas: le symbole \rightarrow signifie "A SUIVRE", le symbole ∇ signifie "FIN".

Les cartes, planches, tableaux, etc., peuvent être filmés à des taux de réduction différents. Lorsque le document est trop grand pour être reproduit en un seul cliché, il est filmé à partir de l'angle supérieur gauche, de gauche à droite, et de haut en bas, en prenant le nombre d'images nécessaire. Les diagrammes suivants illustrent la méthode.

errata
to

pelure,
on à

32X

REVISTA QUIN
ACABAO TO

H

Ca

O

Se

H

Rig

f

o

CH

Prin

Lu

A
R E P L Y
T O T H E
R E M A R K S
O F

ARTHUR DOBBS, Esq;

O N

Capt. MIDDLETON's *Vindication*

O F H I S

CONDUCT on board his MAJESTY'S
Ship the *FURNACE*,

W H E N

Sent in Search of a *North-west Passage*,

B Y

HUDSON'S-BAY, to the Western *American*
O C E A N.

Humbly Inscribed to the

Right Honourable the LORDS COMMISSIONERS
for executing the Office of Lord HIGH ADMIRAL
of *Great-Britain and Ireland, &c.*

B Y

CHRISTOPHER MIDDLETON, Esq;

L O N D O N :

Printed for GEORGE BRETT, at the *Three Crowns* on
Ludgate-Hill. MDCCLXIV. (Price 3s. 6d. Unbound.)

1744

Acc. No. 34240

R E P L Y

TO THE HONORABLE

R E M A R K S

MADE BY THE HONORABLE

MEMBERS OF THE HOUSE OF COMMONS

ON THE 14th OF APRIL 1841

IN ANSWER TO A RESOLUTION PASSED

ON THE 11th OF APRIL 1841

RELATIVE TO THE PROCEEDINGS

OF THE HOUSE OF COMMONS

ON THE 11th OF APRIL 1841

IN ANSWER TO A RESOLUTION PASSED

u
fa
V
M
fa
yo
wh
ha
de
wh

To the RIGHT HONOURABLE the
LORDS COMMISSIONERS

For Executing the OFFICE of

LORD HIGH ADMIRAL

OF
Great-Britain and Ireland, &c.

MY LORDS,

YOUR *Lordships* having honoured me with your Commission to attempt the Discovery of a Passage to the Western American Ocean, by *Hudson's-Bay*, upon the Probability of such a Passage; and my Conduct in the said Voyage having been questioned by Mr. *Dobbs* (the Projector of it) Accusations were brought against me to your *Lordships*, by that Gentleman; who, not satisfied with my Answers, has, by a second Attack in Print, endeavoured to lose me in your *Lordships* good Opinion, and ruin my Character with my Fellow-Subjects. To whom then could I address the following

DEDICATION.

Sheets, but to your *Lordships*, who are my immediate Judges, and must either acquit me from, or indelibly fix upon me the Stain of the vilest and most corrupt Treachery and Ingratitude.

I cannot doubt your *Lordships* Patience in giving me a fair Hearing. I am thoroughly satisfied that, on weighing the Evidence and Reasons on both Sides, your *Lordships* will pronounce with impartial Justice; and hope, till you are satisfied by the Strength of my Antagonist's Proofs and the Weakness of my Defence, that your *Lordships* will allow me the Honour to subscribe my self,

Your LORDSHIPS,

Most Humble,

Most Obedient,

Most Devoted, and

Obliged Servant,

Christopher Middleton.

ION.
rdships, who
, and must ei-
indelibly fix
ilest and most
gratitude.

rdships Pa-
Hearing. I
t, on weigh-
sons on both
pronounce
d hope, till
length of my
Weakness
Lordships
to subscribe

d, and
Servant,
iddleton.

PREFACE.



AS every particular Member of the Society, must receive some Benefit by Advantages accruing to, or sustain some Loss or Inconveniency by the Misfortunes which may fall upon, his Country; 'tis no Wonder, if thinking Men are anxious to procure the former to, and avert the latter from, the Public: And doubtless, as this is incumbent on every Individual, who has the Good of his Nation at Heart (alone neglected by the Indolent and Thoughtless) every Scheme offered to a Ministry, with this *sole* View of National Interest, ought to be received as the Effect of public Spirit; tho' the Projector, ignorant of the secret Springs which give Motion to the grand Machine of Government, should have been mistaken, and built upon a wrong, or weak Foundation, and his Scheme for that reason lain aside.

What is offered with the above View, is so far from being imposed, that it is ever left to the Judgment of our Superiors, who being seated at the Helm, ordering and directing the Course of the political Bark, must, consequently, be better able to judge what (and in what times) is most conducive to the public Good, than can any Particular: Which considered, none ought to be discontented, if a Government does not pay a Deference to, or fall in with, his private Sentiments.

On the other Hand, a Project may be offered, apparently founded on such Probability, and supported by such plausible Reasons, as may induce a Ministry to take it into serious Consideration; and, after having maturely weighed the Inconveniencies on the one Hand, and possible and probable Advantages on the other, and finding the latter Scale considerably preponderate, resolve to prosecute what appear'd to them so very great an Advantage to their Country, if it answers in the Experiment: Especially, when the Expence and Hazard are inconsiderable, compared with the public Benefit, which they were induced to hope, by the Probability of what was offered. But in case Experience proves the Impossibility of succeeding, by Inconveniencies and Dangers, which could not be foreseen; and could be only discovered by such Experience; yet, both the Projector and Ministers, are so far from being liable to public Censure, that they deserve public Thanks, for attempting the Good of their Country, wherever there were solid Reasons to hope it. And neither the one nor the other will tax a People with Ingratitude, by apprehending public Reproach, for not being more than Men.

Now this latter, was in a great Measure the Case of Mr. *Dobbs*: By his reading the Accounts of former Attempts to find a North West Passage to the *Western American* Ocean, and the Probability he imagined from the Situation, the Tides, &c. of such a Passage being yet to be discovered (which must necessarily be a

very

very
ousto
and n
Lord
plausi
he ad
berat
Ships
confi
many
the M
prize
I
accep
in H
try,
(for
to ex
Hon
left
long
vide
my
up,
kno
but
coul
succ
wer
ing
A
to I
An
Pub

very great public Advantage, as is too obvious to mention, were such Passage to be found, and navigable) laid his Thoughts before their Lordships of the *Admiralty*; and gave such plausible Reasons for the Probability of what he advanced, that after long and mature Deliberation, their Lordships determined, with two Ships, to attempt such Discovery. A very inconsiderable Expence, if weighed against the many Advantages which must have accrued to the Nation, had Success crowned the Enterprize.

I was recommended for, and induced to accept, the Command of these Ships; and, in Hopes of being serviceable to my Country, and at the same time to my Family, (for I own, I am not public-spirited enough to expose the latter to Want, for the empty Honour of having been useful to the former) left a good Employ, in which I had been long settled; by which I was enabled to provide comfortably for my Children, and which my Employers were unwilling I should give up, to proceed upon the Discovery. I acknowledge I departed with sanguine Hopes; but Experience, (though I did all that Man could do, to the best of my Knowledge, to succeed in the Enterprize), proved those Hopes were vain, as my *Vindication* in the following Sheets will evince.

As their Lordships of the *Admiralty* were so Mr. *Dobbs* ought to have been, satisfied: And, as they did not apprehend from the Public, so that Gentleman could not fear from

the above Honourable Board, the least Censure. Their Lordships had the public Interest at Heart, and did not rashly enter upon this Undertaking: But, here is a material Difference between their Lordships and Mr. *Dobbs*; they consulted solely the Benefit of their Country; he seems to have had only his own Interest in View. Wherefore, to disculp himself, if possible, to wipe away the Stain of private Interest, and to revenge my preventing a clandestine Trade, which would have led him into the Profits made by the *Hudson's-Bay* Company, he has *endeavour'd* to throw the Blame of our not having realized his imaginary Passage, upon my wilful Neglect and Discouragement of all on Board who had it at Heart, the Consequence of my having received a Bribe to conceal, what the Government employed me, to discover. To this End his Agents, I have reason to suppose, from his own Words, were to procure Witnesses, to support the Charge; two he found, who brought over a third; and he, poor weak Man, has in his Evidence almost every where, contradicted what he had long before signed for Truth. But this Industry, the Artifice of the anonymous Letter, and Mr. *Dobbs's* Endeavours, by disingenuous Quotations, Surmizes, &c. &c. &c. are but feeble Batteries to overthrow the impenetrable Bulwark of Truth, which is a plain Relation of Matters of Fact supported by undeniable Evidence; whereas, that of his three Witnesses is inconsistent, and contrary in many Places, to even a Possibility;

E.
least Cen-
ic Interest
upon this
ial Differ-
r. *Dobbs*;
of their
his own
disculp
the Stain
my pre-
would
e by the
favoured
realized
Neglect
who had
ving re-
Govern-
this End
from
itnesses,
who
k Man,
e, con-
ed for
of the
s En-
mizes,
ies to
Truth,
f Fact
ereas,
t, and
ssibili-
lity;

P R E F A C E. ix

lity; of which the following Sheets contain several irrefragable Proofs, and plainly manifest the Art and Industry vainly used by Mr. *Dobbs* to make good the heavy Charge against me, by adding what he thought conducive to that End; by giving in Suppositions of mine as my own Sentiments, and thence drawing his Conclusions; by concealing what he thought necessary; by changing doubtful Opinions to positive Evidence; and by wresting and straining what is Equivocal to the Sense he would have it bear, &c.

This Charge is supported beyond all Contradiction in the following Reply to that Gentleman's *Remarks* upon my *Vindication*; and I hope I have, to a Demonstration, proved in these Sheets, that Mr. *Dobbs* has ventured out of his Depth in his Reasoning upon Tides, &c. in which he is as contradictory to that Doctrine, as his Witnesses are to themselves, to one another, to Truth, Probability, or even Possibility.

I require only the Patience of impartial Readers, to wipe off all the Dirt which, for the Reasons already mentioned, Mr. *Dobbs* has thrown upon me.

I ought here to make an Apology for my not being Methodical; but I was obliged to follow my Antagonist, Paragraph by Paragraph; and his Book is not digested under proper and regular Heads.

If I have any where, inadvertently, let drop a warm Expression, I hope the Public will excuse me, when convinced of the Injustice done

done

* P R E F A C E

done me, by this virulent Attack of *Mr. Dobbs* upon my Character; that he himself will pass it over for the following two Reasons: 1st, That he has given me Cause to believe, that he well knows the Accusations brought against me, are entirely groundless; and that the Evidence given in to support them was concerted, and (as these following Sheets I hope will prove) in wilful Prejudice to the Truth. 2^d, That he, (*Mr. Dobbs*) has throughout his *Remarks*, treated me with Language much more excusable at *Billingsgate* than in a Gentleman accustomed to polite Conversation.

I shall only add, that for the Ease of my Readers, whose Time may be too precious to be spared to attend to private Altercations, I have, towards my Conclusion, summed up the Evidence on both Sides, and am so conscious of my Integrity, that I shall wait, without the least Apprehension, the Sentence of the *Lords* of the *Admiralty*, and that of the *Public*. I cannot doubt the Patience of the former, as their Justice makes it incumbent on them (they being my immediate Judges) to hear my Defence, and accordingly to condemn or approve my Conduct. I cannot question the Impartiality of the latter, from the Genius of the *English* Nation, naturally abhorrent from whatever carries the least Resemblance of Dis- ingenuity, or an unfair Procedure.

Capt. MID-



Capt. *MIDDLETON*'s
A N S W E R

T O

The REMARKS on his VINDICATION
by *ARTHUR DOBBS*, Esq;



HAD not Mr. *Dobbs* obliged me to vindicate my Character, which he has attack'd in a manner not at all becoming his own, the World would not have been troubled with the Altercations of two Persons, neither of whom is considerable enough to engage the Attention of the Public.

That Gentleman has endeavoured to enforce a Belief of what he advances by a Parade of superior Knowledge. I shall not dispute either his Capacity or Learning, tho' I can by no means admit him a competent Judge of Journals, Tides, Currents, or Sea Affairs: Neither do I think his Ignorance in these, can any ways hurt his Reputation as a Man of Letters.

B

That

That Gentleman has certainly met with a great Disappointment in the Miscarriage of his darling Project ; to that, and his Hopes of convincing the World he had good Grounds for his having engaged the Public in a great Expence, I attribute both his Anger to me, and the Calculations he has published, which are indeed no other than so much Dust thrown in the Eyes of his Readers.

I shall be very far from retorting the indecent Language, with which he has treated me, throughout his Book. I shall behave to him with an equal Regard to both his, and my own Character ; wherefore I am unwilling to believe him capable of palming upon the Public an Invention of his own for Truth ; and for this Reason I attribute his Account of our first Acquaintance to a Failure of his Memory, and this I ascribe to his Disappointment and Passion, of which I am the unhappy Object.

When he is cool enough for a deliberate Recollection of Facts, I hope he will consider the Impossibility of my having first made an Application to him, to obtain the Command of a King's Ship, since he must acknowledge, that till *May 1735*, I had not the Honour to be known to him ; consequently was a Stranger to his Project of finding a Passage by *Hudson's Bay* to the *South Sea*. Hence it is evident, and indeed *Mr. Dobbs* says it in express'd Terms, Page 8, that, *he sought my Acquaintance* : To what End should he give himself that Trouble, if not to obtain from me Instructions and Assistance, as I had many Years used the *Hudson's Bay* Trade ? He then did me the Honour to entertain an advantageous Opinion of my Ability ; for these are his own Words :

—“ Recollecting that I had read in the Transactions of the Royal Society, some Remarks upon the Variation of the Needle, &c. in *Hudson's Bay*, communicated by one *Capt. Middleton* who commanded one of their Ships, &c. it naturally oc-

“ cur'd

“ curr'd to me that he would be a proper Person to
 “ be acquainted with.” I leave any impartial Man
 to consider whether a Person, fond of his Scheme,
 who thinks he has found a proper Man to consult
 and give him such Lights as may enable him to
 bring it to Perfection, will not also naturally believe
 such Person more proper to conduct the Affair, than
 any other who can only proceed by his Instructions ;
 and in such Case, will not endeavour to engage him
 in the Undertaking ? Indeed if any one reflects on
 what Mr. *Dobbs* himself says ; on the many and dif-
 ferent Steps he took ; on the Length of Time he
 anxiously spent to carry his Views into Execution ;
 on his owning, in exprefs Terms, that he sought my
 Acquaintance ; on the huddled Manner in which he
 gives the Particulars of our first Interview, and sub-
 sequent Correspondence, will be apt to think, on such
 Reflection, that it is more than probable I have ad-
 vanced nothing but Matter of Fact, in saying that
*he made me Proposals to draw me off from the Com-
 pany's Service.* It amounts almost to a Demonstra-
 tion that he did so, when it is farther considered that
 I had been long settled in that Service, and conse-
 quently could hardly think of quitting certain Bread
 for a precarious Employ. Again, I believe that
 every unbiass'd Reader will allow it more probable,
 that he who had an Interest with the M-----rs, and
 Admiralty Board, should propose getting me a
 King's Ship, than that I, who had none with any
 of these great Men, should even dream of obtaining
 such a Command contrary to the known and settled
 Rules of the Navy.

I am the more apt to think that his Denial of these
 Particulars proceeds from a Defect of Memory, as
 he is mistaken in saying that Mr. *Allan* was with
 him at our first Interview ; for neither that Gentle-
 man, of whom I asked the Question, nor I, can re-
 collect that he was then one of the Company. Two
 other

other Gentlemen were with Mr. *Dobbs* at our first Meeting, but I affirm I never saw Mr. *Allen* till I was sitting out in the *Furnace*.

A Repetition of the Particulars of our Discourse, when I had the Honour first to see Mr. *Dobbs*, may fatigue, but cannot affect a Reader. I may affirm, and he may deny; and after all, whom shall the Public believe, or who will give himself the Trouble to consider whether there are any, and what Reasons to induce the one Party roundly to assert, and the other flatly to contradict. Wherefore they must rest their Judgment upon Probability, and such Matters of Fact as are advanced, and are incontestable Guides to Truth.

As this is the most proper Place, I beg leave to mention one in particular, which might, from the Character of the Gentleman I shall name, be thought sufficient, had I no other Proofs to support my Veracity, with regard to my having said that Mr. *Dobbs* first solicited me to undertake the Discovery of a Passage, which I am now satisfied is no where to be found but in that Gentleman's Imagination or Writings. I acquainted Sir *Bibye Lake*, Governor of the *Hudson's Bay* Company, with Mr. *Dobbs* having solicited me to enter into his Views, and my having insisted upon 500 *l.* a Year being settled on the longest Liver of my Family, as an Equivalent, if I threw up a beneficial Employ in the Company's Service.

It was in answer to this very Demand that, besides the Offer of a King's Ship, he subjoined the Promise of a good Reward from the Publick at my Return, and a Grant to me and my Posterity of all such Lands as I should discover. Nay he was so anxious to carry on his Project, that on my refusing these Terms, he desired I would recommend some other Person.

Though

Though I begged to be excused from this, I was however willing to give him all the Light I could by Journals, &c. For I had no Notion that any Information which Mr. *Dobbs* might receive from me, could possibly interfere with the Trade of the Company, or that any further Discovery, if a Passage was found, could any ways affect Lands already discovered, or prove injurious to my Employers.

If what I have already said is not of Weight sufficient to procure me Credit with the Public, I hope what Mr. *Dobbs* himself has written, will be thought a good Voucher of the Truth; for he himself proves that he industriously sought after me; and to what End, I leave the World to judge. His Letter, *October 23, 1735*, contains the following Paragraph.

“ S I R,
 “ I hope this will meet you in *London* safe, after
 “ your Return from *Churchill River*, in *Hudson's*
 “ *Bay*. I was in Hopes to have met you in the *Union*
 “ *Coffee-house*, the Day you left *London*, but was
 “ a Quarter of an Hour too late.” See his Letter
 (Append.)

This Letter I communicated to *Sir Bibye Lake*, and asked his Permission to answer it; upon obtaining of which, I wrote to Mr. *Dobbs*. And in subsequent Letters, *June 21, 1737*, and *November 5, 1737*, I desired him to conceal from the Company what Informations I might send him; he himself having before that time told me that he found they trifled with him. For the Truth of which I appeal from angry Mr. *Dobbs*, to Mr. *Dobbs* when his Reason is not disturbed by Passion; but that I have little Hopes to expect will be till he is convinced of the Impracticability of discovering a Passage; for till then, I apprehend the very Mention of it, will produce unhappy and violent Effects.

The Reason of my having required Secrefy, is this ; I had Grounds to believe that my complying with the Promise which I had given Mr. *Dobbs* would be no ways obliging the Company, they would be as well pleased, if no farther Mention was made of that Affair ; and on the other hand, I had engaged my Word to that Gentleman, and was therefore under this Dilemma, either to act contrary to the Inclinations of my Employers, or to break my Word, to which every honest Man will have a tender Regard. Had I designed, in a clandestine Manner, to injure the Company, I should hardly have been weak enough to have shewn Mr. *Dobbs's* Letter, told the Offers made me, and the Terms I insisted on, to Sir *Bibyr*, who thought the latter not exorbitant ; and had I not thought myself under an Obligation to keep my Word, given to Mr. *Dobbs*, as I believed then and still do, that the Discovery of a Passage can no way hurt the Company's Interest, I should have dropt the Correspondence. Wherefore to be just to my Promise and not disoblige my Employers, I gave Mr. *Dobbs* a Handle, which he has made use of, how generously, let the World judge, to tax me with betraying the Company. He appeals to my Letter, N^o 8. in his Appendix, to support this Charge. When that worthy Gentleman is less disturbed with Anger than he seems to have been when he wrote, he will think that Appeal no way to his Credit ; it shews I thought him a Man of Honour, but transported by his Passion, he is resolved to give the World a convincing Proof that I am a very ill Judge of Men.

Mr. *Dobbs* is so very immethodical in his Remarks upon my Defence, with which he has obliged the Public, that could I persuade myself he could coolly mention the Discovery of a Passage, I should be apt to think his Ramblings and Repetitions in that Pamphlet, the Effect of Art to puzzle and deter me from

from attempting a Reply. And indeed to answer him methodically is almost impossible without tiring the Reader as well as my self; for he has brought no less than six and twenty scattered Heads of Accusations against me. *viz.* *Inconsistencies, Neglect, Evasions, Ignorance, Artifice, Folly, Contradictions, Corruption, Sneering, Falsities, Absurdities, Falsifications of Facts, Concealments, Fictions, Retraction, Tampering with Witnesses, wilful Omission, playing double, Imposition on the Public, Falacy, false Reasoning, Forgery, Cant, Roguery, Frauds, Incoherencies, Cruelty, and acting contrary to Instructions.* A less angry or less artful Gentleman, would have abridged these and thrown out the Contradictions and synonymous Terms visible in this heavy Charge: To support which, he, through Forgetfulness, denies Facts; lays great Stress on the Evidence of three Persons, to whom he acknowledges his having made tempting Offers to injure me; upon Letters which I wrote, he knows, and will appear on Hear-say; upon his own Word, contrary to Affidavits. Farther, he taxes Men of a Character with Evasions, palliating and Perjury; builds upon his own Surmizes and Assertions, tho' groundless, and from both draws his Conclusions; relies upon an imperfect Logg; gives Hear-say for Evidence, which no Court will allow: Leans upon exploded Accounts, Fictions, chimerical Descriptions, imaginary Openings, and falacious Reasoning, *&c. &c. &c.* All this I hope to prove in the Course of these Papers, and if so, his heavy Charge against me falls to the Ground.

The Inconsistency he charges me with in Page 10th, I have already evinced, both from Probability, and from my having acquainted Sir *Bibye Lake* (as I already said) lies at his Door; and his Reasoning upon it, which he appeals to the Public, idle, disingenuous, or the Consequence of his Defect of Memory, as I rather believe. As to his Proof from my Letter N^o 8. in the Appendix to his Remarks,

it visibly corroborates what I have already said. In the first Paragraph, I hint to him a Method to be satisfied whether the Company were really desirous of prosecuting a Discovery, he having before intimated that they trifled with him. If his Suspicion was well grounded, 'twas natural for me both to consider what Reasons they might have to be averse from making farther Search after a Passage to the Western *American* Ocean by *Hudson's Bay*, and to be upon my Guard not to disoblige them. The Reasons which occur'd to me are in the Sequel. If his Suspicion was groundless, my Caution could not turn to my Disadvantage. In the second Paragraph of the same Letter, I say, "For my own Part, I confess I should be ambitious of attaining the Honour of such a Discovery, and should hope much that Success would crown the Undertaking. But as I have a certain Income from the Company as long as I am able to go that Voyage, it would not be prudent in me to quit their Employment upon an Uncertainty; and if they should come to the Knowledge of my having any Intention of accepting such an Offer, I have too much Reason to apprehend they would immediately discard me; so that what I now write, being unknown to them, I rely on your Honour, will not be divulged to my Prejudice. In short, I believe the Company think it their Interest rather to prevent than to forward new Discoveries in that Part of the World; and for that Reason they will not suffer any of our Journals to be made Public."

This Paragraph confirms what I have before averred, that I insisted on Terms; and, my so doing, is a Demonstration that Mr. *Dobbs* had made me Proposals to quit the Company's Service; for he who solicits an Employ, was I believe, never known to impose his own Terms,

I shall

Ti
nals
hea
hav
tha
Pag
side
of v
Pag
" "
" t
" a
" C
" v
Bott
acte
to h
me l
to fir
way
apt t
says,
deed
if we
he w
relate
nor o
cation
thoug
tains
the fir
comr
in my
twice
not t
his L

I shall hereafter consider what he says as to false Tides, &c. Page 11. and don't question by the Journals, &c. convincing Mr. *Dobbs* himself, if he can hear Reason upon this Subject, that he is not, as I have already said, a competent Judge of these.

This Gentleman very politely informs the World, that what I have advanced in the first Paragraph, Page 5. of my Vindication is all false. Does he consider what he writes? Have I not evinced the Truth of what I say in that Page, by quoting his own Book, Page 8. where he farther says, "I desired Mr. *Allan*, a Merchant in the City, a Friend of mine, to enquire where he, (*viz.* I) might be found; and finding the Coffee-house he frequented was a Coffee-house in *Thames-street* near *Bilingsgate*, I went with Mr. *Allan* and met him there." At the Bottom of Page 9. he tells us, he thought that he acted in Concert with the Company, yet as he seems to have clandestinely endeavoured to procure from me Informations, by employing his Friend Mr. *Allan* to find me out, and did not, (which was the readiest way) enquire for me of the Company, one would be apt to judge, he really did not then think as he now says, that he acted in Concert with them; and indeed we shall be farther confirmed in that Opinion, if we look back to Page 5. where he plainly shews he was not satisfied with the Conversation he there relates between him and Capt. *Jones* Deputy Governor of the Company. He seems to think his Application to them would be fruitless, and therefore thought of applying to some of the Company's Captains trading in the Bay; but this is digressing. In the first Line, Page 10. he owns he desired I would communicate to him all the Information I could get in my Voyage; and then says he saw me once or twice more before I went on my Voyage. Now do not these Particulars I have mentioned, and Part of his Letter before quoted, support what I have advanced

vanced, and he civilly tells the World is all false. And does not his acknowledging that on my asking if he would go himself? He answered, if he was younger, &c. he believed he should, evince an Earnestness for the Discovery, which confirms the Truth of (as I say) his having made strong Application to me. Page 11. Paragraph 2. he charges me with advancing what is both false and absurd, and in Page 12. flatly denies that he ever made me alluring Promises. I have already answered the Charge, and I hope sufficiently proved his Negation false.

Mr. *Dobbs* acknowledges, Page 12. that he had the Modelling of my Instructions, and that he was a very improper Hand, since all his Knowledge, as he himself says, was from *Fox* and *Scroggs*, he having at that time no Notice of Openings near *Whale Cove*, or *Marble Island*. As to the former, their Accounts had been exploded by later Observations, and both by my self and Officers, as I have already shewn in my Defence. As to the latter, viz. the Openings, &c. I believe neither he, nor any one else knows any thing of them; they are pure Inventions; consequently, neither *Lovegrove* nor any other could ever give the Information he says they did. As to my Lieutenant, he could make no such Discovery, since the greatest Part of the time he was ashore at *Marble Island*, was at Night, and from on Board, it is not likely he should, having been aloft but once, * and that only as high as the Main Yard during the whole Voyage. The Master was ashore a whole Day, the Gunner part of a Day, and the Man, who with the Master, went farther up the River *Wager*, and was with him two Nights and two Days, together with the *Indians*, could find none of these Openings, and discovered only a Bay. Upon this very Man Mr. *Dobbs* lays great Stress, and deems him a material Witness. I join with that Gentleman

* Vid. Appendix, Answers to Q. 8. by *Donalson*, &c.

in hi
activ
Sean
Boat
Ignor
Mar
evid
could
charg
Wor
even
certa
sult
Augu
Coast
we fo
or O
upon
If
point
woul
lowin
Offic
fame
what
cil at
Coast
in the
viz. I
was
order
Lat.
the T
Logg
* V
† V
‡ V
Answ

in his Opinion, for he was both the best, the most active, more to be depended upon, than any one Seaman in either Ship, and almost always in the Boat: But it happens unfortunately, that he is quite Ignorant * of the Lieutenant's fancied Openings at *Marble Island, Wager River, &c.* Whence 'tis evident that neither *Lovegrove* nor the Lieutenant, could give the Information with which Mr. *Dobbs* charges me, and I averr they never mentioned one Word of it while on board; I cannot believe they even thought of any such till after our Return. It is certain the Lands appeared as set down in the Result of the Council held at *Cape Frigid*, the 8th of *August*; and as certain that we search'd all that Coast according to the Resolution then taken. Tho' we found some Islands, we could discover no Inlets or Openings which could answer the Design we were upon.

If Mr. *Dobbs's* Resentment on his being disappointed, was not too prevalent for his Reason, he would not tax me with not complying with, or following my Instructions, *viz.* To advise with my Officers, and at the same Time, and in the very same Paragraph, give a Proof of the contrary; for what else can he term the Resolution taken in Council at *Cape Frigid*? We did not, indeed, search this Coast outward bound, but very narrowly, as resolved in the said Council, upon our Return. The former, *viz.* not searching, &c. which he thinks a Neglect, was in Compliance with my Instructions †, which ordered me to lose no Time, but to proceed to Lat. 65°. Before I attempted any Discovery, for the Truth of the latter, I refer to the Journals, *Loggs, &c.* ‡

* Vid. Appendix. *Guy's* Affidavit.

† Vid. my Instructions in my Vindication.

‡ Vid. Lieutenants Journal in the Navy Office. Master's Answer in Appendix to queries, in my Vindication.

Mr. *Dobbs*, lets me know in Page 12 and 13. that I had the Misfortune to be suspected by him, for want of Integrity from the Informations he had received; and a few Lines after he is convinced that I had been guilty of Concealments, wilful Neglect, Falsifying of Facts, Invention, and Tampering with Witnesses, who also have fallen under his Displeasure, and are taxed by him, with evading and palliating. His Informations were from the Lieutenant, Surgeon, and Clerk. What Credit these Persons can deserve, I leave the Public to judge from irrefragable Facts, which they oblige me to produce. As to the heavy complicated Charge contained in those Pages, it will go off in Smoak upon Examination of Instructions, Orders, Reports, Councils, Journals, Transactions, during, and Evidence of Men employed in, the Voyage, signed both by the Officers and others. For part of these, I must refer to my printed Defence, and the rest will be found in the Appendix to these Sheets.

Mr. *Dobbs* says, Page 14. that my Answer to him was absolutely false and evasive, &c. This we have on his own Word only: For my former Letters which he says that Answer contradicts, will prove that it was neither the one nor the other, they are printed in my Defence; the Lieutenant's, Surgeon's, and Clerk's Answer, whatever they were, will I am satisfied, be thought of no Weight when their Characters are once known, which is contrary with my Inclination to meddle with, and I am sorry, they oblige me by Facts to expose them. That the said Answer of mine to Mr. *Dobbs's* Letter, is contrary to what the Master owned before the Admiralty; is an Assertion unsupported.

Mr. *Dobbs* in his third Paragraph of the same Page, roundly charges me with Falsity in Regard to Mr. *Samuel Smith*, and denies the said *Smith* having been his Agent: I averr it is no Falsity; and will

feal

feal
did
of
part
Sam
Dob
Tra
pan
the
men
Pass
Ag
pell
ceed
Thi
lieve
clud
cop
by
and
his
after
know
from
his
whic
"I
fal."
rant
Dob
his
have
We
V
Pag
ed
*
†

seal it with my Oath, that he, Mr. *Samuel Smith*, did importune me, as I have declar'd in Page 10. of my Defence. Now what may induce any impartial Man to give my Assertion Preference to Mr. *Samuel Smiths* Negation, is the Design which Mr. *Dobbs* has avowed of laying open the *Hudson's Bay* Trade, the setting aside the Charter, of that Company, and the Views which he himself discovers in the Conclusion of his Book to engage the Government in a second Attempt for the Discovery of a Passage *. If Mr. *Smith* was not Mr. *Dobbs's* Agent, and I mistaken in giving him that Appellation, I hope I may be excused, as it proceeds from my not being a good Judge of Men and Things; I had it from his own Mouth, and I believed him; had he not told me this, yet my concluding that he was Agent to Mr. *Dobbs*, from his copying the *Hudson's Bay* Charter (which I have by me) his desiring me to write to him in *London*, and that he would transmit my Letters to Mr. *Dobbs*, his taking from me and sending to that Gentleman after my Arrival my Journal and Chart; an Acknowledgment of which, is in Mr. *Dobbs* Letter from *Dublin*, dated, † *December 14, 1742.* and from his Letter, dated, *Lisburn, January 22, 1742-3.* which begins thus: " In my last to *Samuel Smith*, " I inclosed one to Lord — open for your Perusal." If from these Circumstances, I say, I ignorantly concluded Mr. *Samuel Smith* was Agent to Mr. *Dobbs*, certainly a Gentleman less transported by his Passion would have been good natured enough to have excused the Mistake in Consideration of my Weakness.

What regards me in the fourth Paragraph of Page 14. of Mr. *Dobbs* Remarks, will be answered by Facts, proving how little Credit that Gen-

* Vid. last Paragraph before his P. S. in his Remarks.

† Vid. my Vindication, p. 128, 131.

tleman's Witnesses deserve from the Public, the rest of it is not worth Notice. Yet if the Reader will take the Trouble to examine the Affidavit and Reports, &c. in the Appendix, he will find Mr. *Dobb's* has been too light of Belief. Page 16. is a Detail of what I have already refuted, and a Repetition of an Absurd ridiculous Charge of a 5000 *l.* Bribe, which I answered in my Vindication, and fully proved that it deserves no gentler Terms.

With regard to the Account he gives of his Interview and Conversation with Mr. *Wilson* the Master, Page 17, 18, 19, we only have Mr. *Dobbs* Word, which is contradicted by Mr. *Wilson's* Oath*. Now whether it is more reasonable to trust to Mr. *Dobbs's* Memory, who wrote down what the Master said (after he had left him) which makes one and fifty Lines in Print; or to what a Man of Character deliberately swears, and was heard by a great Part of a Vessel's Crew, as is affirmed in that Oath, is left to the Decision of the Reader, who I am of Opinion, if unbiassed, will believe the Offers of Advantage on one hand, and the Menaces of Ruin on the other, affirm'd in the said Affidavit, could not be without the Direction and Authority of some Person of much greater Weight, than either *Thompson* or *Wigate*.

I shall observe by the bye, that one of the Lieutenant's Reasons for not going higher up the River, was, that his Provisions were spent; yet had they kill'd two Deer weighing about one hundred fifty Pound each. Now three hundred Weight of Meat for nine Men, at three Pound per Day, will serve them eleven Days.

I am very ready to acknowledge, that upon Information from Mr. *James Smith*, of the Master's being with Mr. *Dobbs*, that I took him to my Lodging in a Coach, as he was not able to walk, and ad-

* Vid. Affidavit and Reports in my Vindication.

vised
for
&c.
auth
from
Lieu
of,
he w
his B
his d
of w
gran
have
colle
But
why
has n
Mast
this
bour
Man
Jour
ry;
and
mise,
unhap
his I
Wate
them
as M
can t
Mr.
The
Allan
Gent
ham,
Sept.

vised him to be cautious in what he said or wrote ; for I should be obliged to appeal to his Journals, &c. given under his Hand, which would be deemed authentic Evidence against him, should he deviate from the Truth. The same Caution I gave my Lieutenant ; if this is tampering with, or tutoring of, Witness, I own the Guilt. If Mr. *Wilson* said he would be the Ruin of no Man, but sooner beg his Bread, he spoke like an honest one ; and as to his denying before the Lords of the Admiralty Part of what he had owned to Mr. *Dobbs*, suppose it granted, is it not possible that his Memory might have failed him, and is it not allowable upon a Recollection to retract and acknowledge an Error ? But who can say here was any, and if there was, why may not Mr. *Dobbs* mistake (who I have shewn has not the most retentive Memory) as well as the Master : Beside we have only Mr. *Dobbs*'s Word for this Fact. All that he can make out in this laboured Paragraph is, that the Master acted like a Man of Prudence and Probity, in referring to his Journal and Report, and not trusting to his Memory ; for which Mr. *Dobbs* taxes him with Falsehood, and concludes with a most ungentlemanlike Surmise, which he would not be guilty of, had not this unhappy Affair of a Discovery had some Effect upon his Reason. With regard to the three Bottles of Water brought down by my Order ; when I tasted them, I thought and declared that they were alike, as Mr. *Gill* who was all the Voyage in my Cabin can testify : As can also Mr. *Lanricks*, a Friend of Mr. *Dobbs*, a Gentleman of unblemished Character. The former of these was recommended to me by Mr. *Allan*, and wrote most of my Accounts. Both of these Gentlemen went out Midshipmen with Captain *Wyndham*, in the *Monmouth*, and upon their Return, September 1743, surprized at the Treatment they heard

heard

vised

heard I had met with from Mr. *Dobbs**, expressed their Concern in a Letter to me from *Sbeerness*, in which they say, " We are heartily sorry you should
 " meet with such Treatment for your Services to
 " your Country, as we are perfectly well assured
 " that your circumspect Care, and Vigilance, did
 " not at all merit such a Return ; we can impute
 " it to nothing but the malicious Suggestions of
 " those two worst of Men, *Wigate* and *Thompson*, &c."

Mr. *Dobbs*, Page 20. scorns to enter into a Justification of his Actions ; says I speak very inconsistently about my Clerk, and that the Accusations I have brought against himself, are the Cobwebbs of my own Brain without Proof. But I think the Masters Affidavit refutes this Charge, and I shall make it apparent in the Sequel, that I have brought against him nothing but actual Facts. As to the Inconsistency, with regard to the Clerk ; what I advanced is no more than what he declared to others after he came home, as a Reason for his late Conduct ; nay, he has farther declared since he has become a Witness against me, that he never went a Voyage but he made some body pay him one hundred Pound extraordinary. Mr. *Dobbs*, in the same Paragraph, affirms that my Affidavit Men swear nothing to my Purpose, all very indeterminately, most by hear-say ; and to Facts, either without or beyond their Knowledge ; or without Proof of their Assertions, where they either were not present, or were not capable of judging of Facts, Currents, &c. I shall in the Sequel † evince that he has here given a just Idea of his own Creatures. I do not know that any of these latter were present once in the whole Voyage, at trying the Currents, or so

* Vid. Appendix.

† Vid. Mr. *Dewilde's* Account in the Appendix.

much

m
 I
 an
 at
 it
 A
 po
 exu
 int
 can
 all
 its
 by
 &c
 pub
 apt
 his
 and
 disa
 F
 Que
 teria
 Mr.
 for
 and
 with
 Hun
 Dobb
 Vigi
 I bel
 ty,
 the
 solid
 Tide
 his la
 miser
 these
 with
 prove

much as knew what a Tide or Current meant, though I have endeavoured to teach the Lieutenant, Clerk, and Surgeon, both the Tides and many other things, at least a hundred Times in that Voyage, but found it to no Purpose. In the Sequel I shall refute this bold Affirmation That what is sworn is nothing to the Purpose, &c. In the same Paragraph Mr. *Dobbs* seems to exult, and to give a Reason why he disdains to enter into a Justification of his Actions; for, says he, if I can shew his Defence made up of Falsities, &c. then all this grand Accusation will fall to the Ground with its Author: But if, as I hope to do, I shall prove by irrefragable Testimonies, this Charge of Falsity, &c. may much more justly be brought against that public spirited Gentleman, will not the World be apt to conjecture, that his great Zeal for the good of his Country, is a little tinctured with Self-interest, and that his Anger to me is the Effect of his being disappointed in his private Views?

Page 21. of his Remarks, he says, that my Quotation of Mr. *Lanrick's* Letters, is no Way material in my Defence. It would be good-natur'd in Mr. *Dobbs*, if he would suffer his Readers to judge for themselves. The Letters are in Page 149, 150, and 151 of my Vindication: The first, indeed, with Relation to me, is only a Testimony of my Humanity, and the Regard I had shewn to Mr. *Dobbs's* Friend: The second, an Evidence of my Vigilance; he says, if his Word may be taken, and I believe none who know him will doubt his Veracity, that there was no Probability of a Passage into the Western Ocean; that the Sea was frozen into a solid Body for near 20 Leagues to S. E. that the Tide of Flood came from the same Point; and in his last Paragraph of this Letter, shews in what a miserable Condition our Ship's Crew then was; are these nothing material when Mr. *Dobbs* charges me with wilful Neglect, and avers, nay pretends to prove, that I had a sufficient Number of able

C

Hands?

Hands? Suppose Mr. *Lanrick's* Letter to Mr. *Dobbs*, was in a Manner a Transcript of mine, which I deny, or that it had been revised by me; can any one believe a young Gentleman of Probity, one who is a Dependant on Mr. *Dobbs*, and was recommended to me by him, would set his Hand to any thing but Matter of Fact.

Mr. *Dobbs* would have it believed, that the Ice was just breaking up when we entered the River *Wager*; though what Mr. *Lanrick* wrote is indeterminate: The Ice was breaking up at a Branch of *Wager* River (which I named *Dear Sound*) when our Boat first went up. As to my desiring that young Gentleman to say nothing for some little Time relating to the Discovery, it is no more than what I required of every one else who was in the Voyage*, and in Consequence of that Duty and Respect, I ought to pay to the Lords of the Admiralty, by laying before them the first Accounts of all that related to the Voyage in which they had done me the Honour to employ me.

The Letter mentioned in Page 21. said to be written by *Ann* † the Gunner, and a Duplicate sent to one of the Lords of the Admiralty, is of doubtful Credit; and seems to me that the said *Ann* was ensnar'd by the Clerk; this however cannot make against, but for my frozen Straits by opening another Passage for my Tides and Whales to come through, which Mr. *Dobbs* was not aware of, for with much Labour he has given them a double Passage; consequently, this is not full against my Tides, and Whales coming through from the *Atlantic Ocean* as it is reasonable to believe.

He seems in this Paragraph to lament that the Men who stayed with the Boat, were not to be had, neither indeed could the Evidence of the Man who was with the Master above the high *Bluff* be gotten;

* Vid. Appendix, Mr. *Derwilde's* Account.

† Vid. p. 144, 145, Mr. *Dobb's* Remarks.

these were as Mr. *Dobbs* says the most material Witnesses as to the chief Facts. I am glad he admits the latter, who was also with the Master up *Wager River*, to be of such Consequence in the present Dispute. What he had to say shall in the Sequel be lain before the Reader.

The first Paragraph, Page 22. Mr. *Dobbs* refers to the Lieutenant's, Surgeon and Clerk's, Answers, and to the Council Signed by me at *Cape-Frigid*. With Regard to his strict Tide, I have sufficiently answered him in my Vindication; the Lieutenant in his Journal contradicts his Answer given to Query 10, the Surgeon and Clerk are no Judges of Tides, and the Council I signed at *Cape-Frigid* makes nothing to his Purpose, but fully proves that I followed my Instructions.

In his next Paragraph Mr. *Dobbs* exults in laying hold of the Difference he mentions between the Manuscript Copy and my printed Defence; in the former I say I had seen Whales 20 or 30 Leagues up the Straits, but in the latter 50 or 60; he is certainly in the Right and I am not in the Wrong, for the Difference is owing to the Error of the Press; however Captain *Spurril*, on his Return from his last Voyage, told me that in the Year 1727 he had seen a great Number both of Young and Old Whales as high as *Cape-Diggs*, which is 130 Leagues up the Straits at the West Entrance into *Hudson's-Bay*. Can Mr. *Dobbs* suppose the Whales are under a Necessity of rising to blow; or that they do not often go many Leagues without appearing; or that they are stationed?

That I have traded for fresh Bone in all Parts of the Straits and Bay, as at the *Sleepers*, *Belchers*, and other Islands, is indisputable Truth, and no way contradicted by my Letter; thus allowing it possible that a Printer may, and did, mistake one Figure for another, I am neither pinched, have contradicted myself, nor deserve to lose my Credit; what I

wrote in 1737-8, was only, as is apparent, from hear-say; and I can't perceive what use Mr. *Dobbs* can make of the Information I gave him in 1739, since it was not from my self, but from the Relations I received, and which have been contradicted by my own Observations. I said in the * first of these Letters, that what I had been informed were favourable Circumstances, viz. *The Whales and the Tide ebbing 5 Fathoms*, which latter Mr. *Dobbs* has been disingenuous enough to take no Notice of as it makes against him, and was an Incident from which I presumed that it might come from the Western Ocean, and gave me the greatest Hopes of a Passage had it been true; but we found, upon Tryal, that it did not rise above half that height, which with judicious Men will be allowed, without farther Trials, to be a convincing Proof that there is no Passage to be discovered.

Can Mr. *Dobbs* pretend that he has allowed me a candid Treatment since he conceals the Account I gave him some Years since? he thought it too much in favour of my Frozen Straits, which I have since discovered. I then said, if I remember rightly, it was not above 4 or 5 Leagues from the *Welcome* to the North-bay near *Cape-Comfort*, by comparing *Scrogg's* and *Bylot's* Journals. And we have since found at *Cape-Frigid*, that this nearly agrees with the Truth. I farther said, it was more likely there was a Passage for the Tides where the Land could not be above 4 or 5 Leagues over, than where it was so many hundred, as Captain *James* endeavours to make the Distance between the Western *American* Ocean and *Hudson's-Bay*. He may be in the right; and I my self am of Opinion, by what we can gather from all the Northern *Indians* with whom we have traded, that the Distance cannot be less than 4 or 5 hundred Leagues.

* Vid: my Letter in the Remarks.

Mr.

Mr. Dobbs says Page 23. ironically Sneering, that the Finn breaking off in a short time must be credited, because I have said it. If that Gentleman was as industrious to discover the Truth as he is to propagate false and scandalous Reports and Informations, he would have informed himself, among the *Greenland* Traders, with relation to Particulars of which he is ignorant. Had he done this, he would have spared his sarcastical Sneer, and not have accompanied it with a false Assertion, that the Finn might have been long taken tho' it looked fresh. Now 'tis very well known that when the Finn is cut out, a Part of the Gum is cut with it, which in few Days changes Colour, and when it has been long taken putrifies.

This very knowing Gentleman, who relies upon romantic Accounts, tells us, that the *Eskimoux Indians* have large Boats in which they cross the Bay, and these Boats are made of Bone. I allow there may be some trifling pieces of Bone used in their Boats: The covering is Seal-Skin or Sea-Horse-Hide; but the Bone made use of in these open Canoes is mighty inconsiderable, and whether they are fit to cross *Hudson's-Bay* which is 140 Leagues over, I leave to the Judgment of any considerate Man. Farther, as there are no *Eskimoux Indians* who live to the Southward of 61 or 62 Degrees on the West side the Bay, he has unluckily chosen the very broadest Part of it. May be, to bring himself off, he will say that he only mentioned the Bay indeterminately, and that he meant *James's-Bay*. This however must prove a great Disingenuity, and the Evasion would not help him tho' he thus shortened the Passage 100 Leagues; for 'tis known the *Indians* never venture out of Sight of Land, or into any thing of a Sea; consequently allowing his Bay to be *James's*, the Account is romantic: For the latter Bay is not less than 40 Leagues over, consequently

Mr.

quently in crossing, the Land must be long lost to Sight.

Monsieur *Jeremie* says the *Esquimaux Indians* cross *Hudson's-Bay* to get Iron from the Wreck of the *Danish Ships*, but does not mention a Word of Mr. *Dobbs's* Whalebone Boats. He says p. 12, " Les *Esquimaux* du detroit de *Hudson*, y viennent aussi quelquefois pour le meme Sujet. Ils traversent la Baie de *Hudson* avec ces *Biscayennes* faites avec des peaux de Loups marins, donc j'ai parlé ci devant." The *Esquimaux* (i. e. *Indians*) of *Hudson's Straights*, sometimes also come hither, (that is to the *Danish River*, before mentioned by this Author to get Iron from the Wreck) with their *Biscayan Boats* made of the Skins of Sea-Wolves as I have already said. Now why he calls these Boats *Biscayan Boats*, is from a Conjecture of this Nation of *Indians* being the Descendants of *Biscayers*, who in fishing on these Coasts were wrecked, p. 6. *Relation du detroit et de la Baie de Hudson*, &c. par Monsieur *Jeremie*. Before this he is in page 3. very particular in the Description of these *Biscayan Boats*; he tells us that he has seen them large enough to carry fifty Persons, and that they are covered with Sea-Wolves-Skins instead of side Planks: Says not a Syllable of Whale-Bone. But neither this Author, *de la Poterie*, nor *Jo. de la France* are to be depended upon, since our own Experience proves several of their Accounts false and romantic; the *Indian Boy* of that Nation whom I brought to *England* denies their being *Cannibals*, tho' *Jeremie* expressly says they are so. I do not find that either of the two other *French* Writers have given any Account of Mr. *Dobbs's* Whalebone-Boats, if there is any such, I must have overlooked it. Mr. *Dobbs* has not named from which of these Authors he has received his Information: But if there is no mention of them, I rather pity, than am angry with the poor Gentleman.

Mr.

Mr. *Dobbs* in the same page 23, and 24, taxes me with Evasion and Falsties to prove that *Wager* is a Strait and not a fresh Water River; he says my Reasons to support my Conclusions are no ways satisfactory; and that the Tides flowing from the Eastward since, it is a Strait, is no reason at all; and there lessening the higher they flow, not conclusive, allowing the Fact to be true. He says also the Water's being brackish is no Reason, neither is the Water-fall which brought the Boat to a Grapling to be considered as such; and then refers to the Lieutenant's first and most genuine Report, making him by the bye a very gross Compliment; which he did not consider ought to destroy that Gentleman's Credit, if well grounded. In the 2d Line of his 24th Page, Mr. *Dobbs* dogmatically asserts *Wager* River is a Strait, but brings no manner of Reason for this Assertion, 'tis sufficient he says it. Now those I have given to support my Affirmation of it's being a River, must be convincing to every Man of Judgment: Mr. *Dobbs* excepted; and they agree with what may be observed in all Rivers. That of the *Thames* is Salt at the Mouth, brackish at *Greenwich*, fresh at *London*. At the Entrance the Tide flows 18 or 20 Foot, 16 or 18 at *Gravesend*, and at *Richmond* not above 4 or 5; where it flows but about 3 Hours, tho' at the Entrance it flows near 6. The farther any River runs from the Sea, the more the Height and Course is lessened. What I have said of the Tide flowing from the Eastward is apparently taken notice of, to shew it could not come from any Western Ocean; as to the Straits of *Magellan* the Tides flow from two Oceans; the Eastern and Western; and the Tides diminishing near the Middle of those Straits, must be attributed to the long Course they run, before they meet. But these Straits and the other Places mentioned by Mr. *Dobbs* are no Way to his Purpose. Will he

he pretend to say, that the Waters freshen in any of them, by the Length of their Course, as I have proved * they do in *Wager* River, by Affidavits. No Whales having been seen in *Wager* River at any Distance beyond *Deer* Sound, is a farther Proof of its being a Fresh-water River †: It is well known the Black Whales are never found but in Water which is Salt. As to the Lieutenant's Report if it was altered it was not by me, or with my Privity or Knowledge. When it was brought to me, I found it so unintelligible that I desired both him and the Master to explain themselves to the Clerk, that he might write it down from their own Mouths, and saw it not again till it was written and signed; which I believe none of them can deny. In that Report the Lieutenant and Master say, there is a great Probability of an Opening or Inlet into the Sea somewhere on the East-side: But in the Report published N^o. 34. in the Appendix of Mr. *Dobbs's* Remarks, the great Probability of an Opening is on the West-side; now which is most likely to be genuine, that written by my Clerk from the Mouths of the Lieutenant and Master and signed by them, immediately after their Return on board, or this published by Mr. *Dobbs*, and signed by the Lieutenant only, a great many Months after our return Home, I leave to the Determination of my Readers. Mr. *Dobbs* or the Lieutenant is a little Jesuitical in their Openings or Inlets, and would have the World believe, a Passage might be found thro' some or one of them, to the *American* Western Ocean; but could they be so ingenious as to speak out, they would let the Public know there are a number of what we call Open-

* Vid. Appendix to my Vindication, and *Richard Guy's* Affidavit in that of these Sheets.

† Vid. Mr. *Carew's* Observations at the End of the 20. Query in the Appendix to this.

ings
two
all
whic
be f
Pass
says
Wat
fidav
oned
Answ
M
after
calls
Eval
wide
ther
he pl
into
that
and b
and
Know
my c
prizin
is kn
Sense
saw,
Amer
Rem
cover
his R
grow
they
they
Hudso

* V
† P

ings, both on the East and West side, which run about two or three Miles into the Lands, as is common on all such high Coasts; these when the Ice is gone, which cannot be above a Week or two in a Year, may be fit to harbour Ships, but will never afford us a Passage to the Western *American Ocean*. Mr. *Dobbs* says that I would insinuate there was a Fall of fresh Water; in answer to this, I refer my Reader to the Affidavit of *Richard Guy**; to the Report already mentioned, made by the Lieutenant and Master; and to the Answer given into the Admiralty to the second Query.

Mr. *Dobbs* in the same and the foregoing Page, after having shewn his great Reading, which no one calls in Question, again taxes me with Fallacy and Evasion; and tells the Public there is no River so wide or deep, as I have made *Wager River*, in either *Sweden* or *Norway*: But the great Confidence he places in his historical Relations, has here led him into a Mistake; for I practically know and averr that there are several between *Drunton* and *Bargan*, and between that and *Malfstream*, near *Hollygalant*; and also, not far from *Stockholm* in *Sweden*. His Knowledge is from Accounts and Maps, mine from my own Observations; wherefore it would be surprizing, that a Gentleman who thinks so justly, and is known to be blessed with a very great Share of Sense, should publish a Map of Countries he never saw, and but lately heard off, I mean that of † *North America*, an Infant of his own Imagination, if his Remarks had not proved how dire an Effect a Discovery of a Passage to the *South Sea* has had upon his Reason. In Answer to his Shrubs and Trees growing in more Northerly Climates, I will admit they do, but 'tis not from thence to be inferred that they grow upon the Northern Parts of the Coast of *Hudson's Bay*, for Reasons I have given in the ex-

* Vid. the Appendix to this, and to my Vindication.

† Published by Robinson.

traordinary Effects of Cold in the Philosophical Transactions, N^o. 465, and reprinted, Page 199 in my Vindication.

Mr. *Dobbs* thinks he has good Reason to esteem *Norton's* Account an Invention of my own ; indeed it may be set upon a Level with the Passage about *Wager* River, and *Brook Cobban*, of which he has received Information from the two public spirited Gentlemen his Friends ; for I have since found that *Norton's* Tides and theirs are much the same. To speak the Truth, there can be no depending on the Accounts given by Land Men of Sea Affairs : Though I think Mr. *Norton* deserves our Credit, in Relation to what he has heard in a Series of Years from many different *Indians*, coming to, and trading with, the Factory ; as 'tis well known he was perfect Master of their respective Languages.

It is very possible, and I believe that Mr. *Norton* did set out about the Time mentioned by Mr. *Dobbs*, Page 25. of his Remarks : But of this, neither he nor I can be certain ; and I believe no body else can fix the Time, except the Company. But this I averr, that he has very often told me, and not long since, that he went from the Factory in the Fall of the Year, which was sometime in *August*, and paddled along the Shore in a Canoe, with a Northern *Indian* Man, and a Girl, for the Space of fourteen Days, before they quitted the Canoe ; and travelled afterwards Inland to the Northward of the West, about ten or twelve Days, and then met with the Northern *Indians*, or some of them. Now could they be fourteen Days in paddling but twenty Leagues, from *Cburchill* the Latitude of 60°, which is but one Degree ? Twenty Miles a Day in a Canoe, is esteemed but easy Labour for him who paddles. Let us suppose they went but fifteen Miles in twenty four Hours, one Day with another ; this gives two hundred and ten Miles in the Space of Time mentioned, which
are

are
Mr.
West
Leag
a gre
set o
Canc
comi
count
50 M
tweer
Mr.
Trav
my A
is as
Parts
had s
Sweet
have
Fr
made
tions
most
came
the
and a
Christ
ral V
they
which
the F
As ne
in a st

* M
† T
the Fac
they re

are $3^{\circ} 30'$, and makes the Latitude $62^{\circ} 30'$; and Mr. *Dobbs's* great Sweep to the Southward of the West an Inconsistency. Had they landed but twenty Leagues from *Churchill*, and been obliged to make a great Sweep to the Southward, they had better have set out by Land at first, than to have gone in a Canoe, since their Sweep to the Southward, was coming back again. But Mr. *Dobbs* has this Account from one who never in his Life-time was * 50 Miles from the Factory, unless it was going between *Churchill* and *York Fort*; if ever he did that. Mr. *Dobbs* would make us believe he was a great Traveller to the Northward. As to Mr. *Norton*, my Antagonist has not seen him these 14 Years, and is as much in the Dark with regard to these Northern Parts, as the other Gentleman from whom he has had such material Intelligence; indeed this Southern Sweep tallies very well with the other Accounts they have given him.

From all the Accounts I could get, and I have made the strictest Enquiry, the Northern *Indian Nations* live between the Lat. of 63° and 64° . The most particular Account I ever had, was after I came home from my last Voyage, and this was from the *Indian* Linguist, whom I had then with me, and at my Lodgings after my Return, till about *Christmas*, 1742, when he died. He had been several Winters and Summers among them, and said they were never less than three Weeks or 21 Nights, which is their way of reckoning, in coming to the the Factory; but were much longer in going back†. As near as he could make it out, their Country lies in a strait Line with the Sun's setting in Summer

* Mr. *Frost*.

† The Reason of this Difference of Time, is that in coming to the Factory, the Way is Frozen, but the Ice broken up when they return.

(from

(from *Cchurchill*) which must be about N. W. Now admit these *Indians* travelled but 20 Miles in 24 Hours, which to them is nothing when the Ground is frozen, this would make 421 Miles, and that Distance N. W. will give near 5° of Lat. which added to that of *Cchurchill*, places these Northern *Indians* in Lat. 64° North; this agrees with all the Accounts I have heard, and with what *Scroggs's* *Indian* said. See his Account in *Whalebone Bay*; from whence they desired him to let them return home, as then being not above three or four Day's Journey from their own Country †. Now how can this agree with, nay, does it not flatly contradict, *Mr. Dobbs's* great Sweep to the Southward of the West from the Lat. of 60° North.

I all along understood, and do yet believe, that *Mr. Norton* continued that Winter and one Summer with these Northern *Indians*, and returned the Winter following, after having travelled throughout their Country, to engage as many as possibly he could, to come down and trade; and if this was the Case, he might very well have observed the Sun's going round several Days together, and the imputed Blunder falls to the Ground.

The accurate Account *Mr. Dobbs* has given us, Pages 25, 26. he says was from the Information of *Mr. Frost*, many Years Linguist in the Service of the Company; that this same Person travelled a great way Northward of *Cchurchill*, and had informed him that near the *Shore* to the Northward, the Trees were small and low; that within Land, there was nothing but Moss for 50 or 60 Miles, but beyond that the *Indians* told them there were large Woods. After which this Gentleman refers to the Surgeon's Account, in his Appendix, and to the Clerk's, N° 40.

† Vid. *Mr. Dobbs's* Remarks, Page 115.

W. Now
Miles in 24
the Ground
es, and that
Lat. which
Northern In-
es with all
that Scroggs'
lebone Bay ;
them return
four Day's
ow how can
contradict,
ward of the

believe, that
ne Summer
d the Win-
ughout their
e could, to
he Case, he
going round
blunder falls

s given us,
ormation of
ervice of the
ed a great
ormed him
the Trees
there was
but beyond
ge Woods.
e Surgeon's
s, N° 40.

Mr. *Dobbs's* eager Desire of a Second Expedition to discover his imaginary Passage, at the Expence of the Public, either makes him impose upon them, as he has done in the above Account in Prejudice of the Truth, or has prevailed on him to credit Accounts given by Men, of whose Veracity he had not previously been satisfied. He has here built on a Narrative, which he tells us he had from Mr. *Frost* ; how proper a Man he was to afford Mr. *Dobbs* any useful Light, I leave to the Judgment of the Public ; for I aver he never was fifty Miles to the Northward of *Cchurchill* Factory ; and when I wintered in that place, 1722, he was the Governor's Cook ; he since, most of his Time, has been at *Moose* River, the southermost Factory in the Bay ; and as I have been informed, could make a shift to understand the Southern *Indians*, but neither Mr. *Frost* nor any other *English* Subject, or Southern *Indian*, that we know of, ever understood a Word of the Northern *Indian* Language, except Mr. *Norton*, *John Butler*, and the *Indian* Linguist, before mentioned. Tho' we have had some of the Northern *Indians* for Years about the Factory, yet none belonging to it could ever learn any thing from them, nor indeed can the Language be attained but by conversing with them when young, as did the three above-mentioned ; how great then must the Surgeon's Modesty be, who says he had that Account from these Northern *Indians*, to which Mr. *Dobbs* refers. Had he been as many Years among them as he had been Days, I fear he would not have been Master enough of the Language to publish a Dictionary † ; yet this Gentleman learnt it, as we may gather from his own Words, in six Weeks, nay, in much less Time ; for he never had seen any of these *Indians*

† Vid. the End of Mr. *Dobbs's* ingenious and entertaining Quarto Romance.

above a Week or a Fortnight before we failed from *Churchill*, yet he had made such a Progress, that he could understand all they said, and was able to learn from them, that we were going past the Copper Mine two or three Days after we left that Factory. The idle Story of a Copper Mine, comes from the Accounts we have had ever since I knew the Country; and by those Accounts we are informed, that these Northern *Indians* are two Summers travelling Northwards from their own Country, before they reach it: A pretty Journey, indeed, if we consider the Rate they travel, commonly 30 or 40 Miles a Day: I am obliged to say that this whole Report, made by the Surgeon and Clerk, is mere Fiction, I refer to it as Mr. *Dobbs* himself does *.

Every Officer and Seaman on board the two Ships, deny their having ever heard a Word of what those two Gentlemen reported during the Voyage, or even of some Months after we were returned home. As to Mr. *Ellis* of the Victualing-Office, mentioned in the said Report, referred to in Page 147 of the Remarks, that Gentleman has denied in the Presence of several of the said Office, his ever having heard me say I could be a Director of the *Hudson's Bay* Company whenever I pleased.

Mr. *Dobbs*, Page 26, seems very unwilling to admit the Testimony of the Journals and Logg-Books †, of either the *Furnace* or the *Discovery Pink*, which have been delivered into the Admiralty and Navy-Office long since; but he will have an imperfect Logg-Book, which he printed, after its having been Months in his own Possession, deemed good Evidence. I am obliged here, in my own Defence, to tax Mr. *Dobbs* with Disingenuity; for what he

* Vid. Appendix to his Remarks, N^o 40.

† These were all copied by the very Persons whom Mr. *Dobbs* had recommended to go the Voyage.

calls
and
the
it, i
whic
the
and
said
have
said
davi
Gent
T
any I
ment
Dobb
finua
Ocea
great
This
refer
cover
that
hims
of W
my I
ralty
Wha
a Lo
Wast
judic
Book
own
mate
Book
H
were
of th

calls the Lieutenant's first Report, is in fact his last, and altered to serve that Gentleman's Purpose ; for in the first, the Probability of any Opening, I repeat it, is said to be on the East Side ; but in this to which Mr. *Dobbs* refers, we are told, it is on the West Side. Will Mr. *Dobbs* pretend that this and the Minutes he sat down of what the Master had said to him from his own Memory, which he would have the World believe, is more genuine than the said Master's Answers to his Queries, and all Affidavits in my Favour ; will he, I say, call this a Gentlemanlike, or even an honest Treatment ?

The true Reason why the Whales were not seen at any Distance above *Deer Sound*, is what I have already mentioned, and not that very weak one which Mr. *Dobbs* supposes in the same Paragraph, where he insinuates, that they come from the Western *American* Ocean in Search of Sea Spiders in *Hudson's Bay*, over great Falls of Water, and thro' fresh Water Rivers. This Gentleman, very disingenuously, says I must refer to my Pocket Logg-Book, or to that of the *Discovery*, in which I might alter what I pleased ; for in that which he left at the Admiralty, and which he himself had carefully perused, there was no Mention of Whales seen without *Wager River* ; but I refer to my Logg-Book given in by my self to the Admiralty, long before Mr. *Dobbs* attacked my Character. What he gave into the Admiralty, and what he calls a Logg-Book, was, I believe, no other than the Waste-Book he got from the Master, on which no judicious Man would lay any Strefs. My Logg-Book, tho' I never compared it with any but my own Journal, I am positive, must agree in every material Point, with all other Journals and Logg-Books kept in either Ship during the Voyage.

He says, as to the Affidavits of *Towns*, &c. they were all Men on Board the *Discovery*. I grant some of them were, but their being in either the one or the

ailed from
efs, that he
ble to learn
he Copper
t Factory.
from the
the Coun-
rmed, that
travelling
efore they
ve consider
o Miles a
e Report,
Fiction, I

two Ships,
what those
e, or even
ome. As
mentioned in
of the Re-
e Presence
ving heard
Hudson's Bay

ing to ad-
d Logg-
ery *Pink*,
iralty and
an imper-
its having
ned good
Defence,
what he

Mr. *Dobbs*

calls

the other Ship, could certainly have no Effect upon their Eye-sight; and they might as well have seen Whales from on board that Ship, as any of us from on board the *Furnace*. I acknowledge as he charges me, I expressly set down, that I had seen no Whale or large Fish of any sort, except one white Whale, &c. but this will appear was in Lat. $63^{\circ} 32'$, * and not near *Wager* River, as Mr. *Dobbs* affirms, for the Entrance of that being in Lat. $65^{\circ} 24'$, and our Course near N. E. the Distance between the two is about 40 or 50 Leagues. I believe no other Journals have taken Notice of any Whales till our Return off the Head Land $63^{\circ} 20'$. He lays great Stress upon his Whales, which every one else must esteem a very trifling Incident. He says that I acknowledge I have seen Whales both at our going into and coming out of *Wager* River, and that falsified my former Letter, by my Proof amounting to no more than three. Now, if Mr. *Dobbs* will allow the Number Three to be in the Plural, I think it is evident I advance nothing but the Truth, in saying we had seen Whales, consequently I have not falsified my Letter. The rest of the Paragraph is a Supposition of his own below Notice.

In his 2d Paragraph, Page 27. Mr. *Dobbs* says the Lieutenant saw Stages at the high Bluff. I do not dispute that Gentleman having said this; but the Man on whom Mr. *Dobbs* lays great Stress, and who was five Miles higher than the Lieutenant, saw none, as appears by his † Affidavit. What Mr. *Dobbs* pleases to term, conjectural and evasive, I think extremely probable and to the Purpose, grounded on Accounts which I had no reason to suspect of Falsity. The Inland *Indians* travel about 200 Miles to the Sea-Coast to kill Whale, &c. for their Winter's Provision.

* Vid. my Logg-Journals, *July* 7th, in my Vindication.

† Vid. Appendix, *Guy's* Affidavit.

Mr. *Dobbs* asserts he had the Account of the Sea-Horses and Whales from the Master, *Wilson*; I am apt to think he found that Account in the Minutes he wrote down when the Master had left him, who mentioned nothing of Sea-Horses, &c. in his Answer to the Queries of the Lords of the Admiralty (the Whales excepted, near *Deer Sound*.) This was the identical vile Person that declared he would sooner beg his Bread than be the Ruin of any Man, that is; by answering contrary to Facts, and to even such as he had signed for Truths, and thus hazard his own Character to ruin that of another, by serving any base Purpose. Mr. *Dobbs* seems to think, nay indeed, more than insinuates, that a Man of such Principles cannot be supposed but to be ready and willing to conceal, palliate, equivocate, deny, or assert any thing, when 'tis for the Service of one *from whom he can have no Expectations*, and that the Public ought to have implicit Belief in whatever Mr. *Dobbs* himself asserts, without condescending to give any Proof: Why else should he object the above Words of the Master, *That he would be no Man's Ruin*, as sufficient to invalidate his Evidence; and on the other Hand, so boldly, and so often assert himself, what is entirely groundless?

Mr. *Dobbs* would unfairly insinuate, by his quoting the Journal, there were Whales seen at the upper Part of *Wager River*. The Journal says *there were many Whales and other Fish above, and none seen below*. These indeterminate Words *above* and *below*, he would make his Advantage of; but 'tis apparent they can refer to nothing but the Station of the Ships which lay at *Savage Sound*, half Way between the Entrance of the River *Wager* and *Deer Sound*; beside the Master and Lieutenant sent to try if any other Way, than that we came in at, could be found out of the said River into the *Welcome*, never had been much higher at that time than *Deer Sound*. The

Effect upon
have seen
of us from
he charges
no Whale
te Whale,
32', * and
ffirms, for
, and our
the two is
ther Jour-
l our Re-
lays great
else must
that I ac-
our going
that falsi-
ounting to
will allow
think it is
in saying
not falsi-
is a Sup-

Dobbs says
ff. I do
; but the
and who
saw none,
Mr. *Dobbs*
think ex-
ounded on
of Fal-
Miles to
Winter's

ation.

Mr.

Journal mentioning Whales, &c. seen above, cannot be interpreted to intend above *Deer Sound*; and in my Vindication, Page 18, I say none ever saw Whales much above *Deer Sound*, which is but 15 Leagues higher than the Entrance of *Wager River*. If Mr. *Dobbs* did not design the Journal should be interpreted as I say, the quoting this Part of it could serve him for no other Purpose. See *Guy's* Affidavit in the Appendix.

Page 28th in Mr. *Dobbs's* Remarks, he says, that my Answer to the large Collection of Water to the Westward is fallacious, &c. And to support the terrible Charge, brought against me in that Paragraph, gives a Dream of his own in Evidence: For I absolutely deny that the Lieutenant or Master ever said that beyond the Islands was a Strait four Leagues wide, going W. S. W. or that they were in any by Channel between the Islands and the Southwest Main. Mr. *Dobbs* knows this full well, and therefore says, the Master, in his *parole* Evidence, before the Admiralty, had made this Declaration; for the Truth of which Mr. *Dobbs* has given his Assertion only, contrary to the Answers † given in by both Lieutenant, Master and others. From this Fiction of his own, he draws a Conclusion, and in an exulting manner, treats me with Language very unbecoming the Gentleman.

I have already taken notice of the genuine Report having been altered, and the Probability of an Opening to the Eastward, as in their joint Report, made on the Spot, changed to the Westward. Which of these two Reports ought to be deem'd the true one, I leave to the unbyassed; but to put it out of all question that there was a Run * or Fall of Water, which

† Vid. their Answer, Page 158, of my Vindication.

* Appendix. Vid. Answer to Query 2d, signed by *Donalson, Iverson, Monro, Gil*, ib. Vid. the Master and Lieutenant's Report 1st of August, 1742, in my Vindication, Page 11.

Mr. *Dobbs* treats as a Fiction contrary to all Truth; to impose on the Public, I refer my Reader to the Affidavit of *Richard Guy*, † the Man whom Mr. *Dobbs* allows a material Witness, and who went with the Master five Miles higher than did the Lieutenant; and also to the joint Report of the Lieutenant and Master.

Mr. *Dobbs*, 2d Paragraph, Page 28, says the S. W. Side was never try'd at all, and my crossing over below *Savage Cove* was nothing to the Purpose. Indeed neither would it have been of any Use elsewhere. If he knows any thing of the Matter, he must be satisfied, as well as I am, that in those Latitudes, could a Passage be found, it would not be open two Weeks in a Year, and many Years the getting to it would be impracticable.

At the Bottom of Page 28, is a Repetition of a Charge, which I have answered in Page 20 of my Vindication†. In Page 29, by the great Logg-Book, he lets the Public know I am convicted of Falsity; I repeat my Affirmation, and again appeal to Journals and Logg-Books of the Masters, Mates, and Midshipmen of the *Furnace*, and to those of the two Mates of the *Discovery*, given in before he commenced this Contest, which doubtless will be allowed to be more authentic Evidence, than what he calls the Logg-Book, and I; the Waste-Book, written by several Hands; and containing but very few Transactions. If there are any in it which differ from the above Vouchers, to which I appeal; there must have been some unfair Alteration made. 'Tis much easier to alter one Book, than eight or ten Journals, each respectively carried through in one and the same Hand Writing, and kept on board two different Ships. I will not tax Mr. *Dobbs* with such Forgery; he will, however, excuse me, if I say, that in my

† In the Sequel I shall give a fuller Answer.

Opinion he does not understand a Logg-Book. But why does he lay such Strefs upon this Logg-Book, and is so unwilling to be determined by the Journals I mentioned?

In answer to what Mr. *Dobbs* in the same Page says, I admit that I was six Leagues due East of *Cape Dobbs*, I have reduced the three Courses into one, allowing the Variation, and find from four in the Afternoon to $\frac{1}{2}$ past three the next Morning, we steered S. W. and by S. true Course 67 Miles or 23 Leagues, which made our Latitude $64^{\circ} 15'$ the Latitude of *Cape Fullerton*. This Cape is about $1^{\circ} \frac{1}{2}$ to the Westward of *Cape Dobbs*, and not two or three Degrees Difference of Longitude, with a Distance between the two Capes of 30 Leagues, as my candid Antagonist insinuates, who would also evince that we did not come within six Leagues of the Headland of *Whalebone Point*, and had not four Hours Day-light. The Sun at that Time sets there, after eight; and in those Latitudes, at that Time you have above two Hours Twilight; the Night was fair and clear to one o'Clock in the Morning, as will appear by the Logg-Book; beside we had the Help of the Northern Lights which appeared then as they do in most clear Nights. Now compare our true Course, steered, viz. S. W. and by S. with the Chart, and it will be found that we passed the Islands off of *Whalebone Point* within two Leagues, about half an Hour past six that Evening, and that by 10 o'Clock we had passed most part of this great Bay (as Mr. *Dobbs* terms it) which is not above three Leagues deep, and then could see at one View both *Cape Fullerton* and *Whalebone Point* as distinctly as at Noon. It blew a fresh Gale at two in the Morning, and the Weather came on thick and hazey; we were about two or three Leagues due East off the Islands of *Cape Fullerton*, and fell suddenly into shoal Water
from

from 43 to 25 Fathoms, which occasioned our steering off South to deepen our Water, and to lye to for clear and moderate Weather. In this I acted according to the best of my Judgment, and I then thought, considering the Weather was thick, that we had a fresh Gale upon the Shore; were in an unknown Part of the World, had not above five or six Men in a Watch able to go aloft to hand or reef a Sail, including even the Officers, that I could not act with greater Care and Prudence. Had Mr. *Dobbs* been there he would, possibly, have directed me better. The Coast lies W. by S. by Compass, and the Wind about East was upon the West Shore. We were then but five Leagues distant from the Main of that Shore, and for two, three or more Leagues from that Main, lye many small Islands and Reefs of Rocks, as I had observed in our Passage outwards, and from *Scroggs's* Journal. I thought, I say, that I could not do better, after I had got into deeper Water and in a fair Way, than to lay the Ship's Head to the Southward, and wait for clear Weather. When Mr. *Dobbs* will be so good as to convince me of my Error in this way of Working, I will readily acknowledge my Ignorance and his superior Judgment in Sea Affairs. This plain Narrative of Matter of Fact, supported by Vouchers, proves the Affidavits the very Truth, and nothing but the Truth. And if the Lieutenant and Clerk say that they could see only the Tops of the Mountains, the former contradicts his own Journal, and the latter advances a Falsity.

In the same Page that Gentleman taxes me with passing in the Night all the Openings seen by *Norton*. I know of none he saw, and if he has made a Report of any Openings, it must be false; for we were convinced in our Passage out, that it was all Main Land, which afforded no Openings; we observed only some small Islands off the Head Lands;

and that we were very certain of this, will appear from our Council held the 8th Day of *August*, in which it was agreed to search between 64° and 63° , that is, to begin to the Southward of *Cape Fullerton*, and the Logg will shew we were not above four Miles to the Southward of 64° . The 10th Day at Noon we were by Observation in Lat. $63^{\circ} 56'$, in about 25 Fathom Water. At 8 that Morning we were three Leagues from the Land, and kept rounding that Bay between 64° and $63^{\circ} 20'$ in the Day-time; at Night we hauled a little farther off to deepen our Water. We laid too till Day-light, and stood in with the Land in the Morning N. W. and W. N. W. to fetch up what we had lost in the Night by driving, as may be seen in the Logg-Journal 10th and 11th of *August* †. We were in 20 or 30 odd Fathoms; seldom above three or Four Leagues from the Land in the Day-time; to avoid Danger in the Night we were farther off. There are indeed several Errata in the printed Logg, which may be compared with the Manuscript. I delivered one into the Admiralty when I gave in my Journal.

Could the very knowing Mr. *Dobbs* imagine that the Ship was to coast a shore, where Land is as high as that over *Torbay* or above *Plymouth*, in the manner Boats do, at half a Mile Distance, especially with a Wind, most Part of the time, two or more Points on the Shore, and a Tender, which was a bad Sailer, if embayed; or can that Gentleman call four or five Leagues a great Distance from such a Shore? I need give no farther Answer to this long Charge, which takes up near two Pages.

The Reason I gave for not sending my Boat ashore; Page 20 of my Vindication, is supported by the Evidence of Men whose Characters will hardly receive any Blemish from the Dirt Mr. *Dobbs* throws,

† Vid. Logg-Book.

or his bold Assertions, and parole Evidence ; and I believe their Affidavits will at least ballance what Mr. *Dobbs* advances upon his bare Word, especially when the Affair of the Discovery throws him into such Passions as visibly prevent his thoroughly considering what he writes ; for as he acts with Judgment and Prudence in his other Affairs, we may reasonably conclude, was not this his Case, he would never have published such groundless Assertions, Inconsistencies, Contradictions, false Reasonings ; have shewn such Disingenuity, or have employed such Flower of Rhetoric throughout his Remarks, as are seldom used by others than the polite and Female Retailers of the scaly Race. The Master, who, for his own Sake, he would insinuate is perjured, has sworn that he had been tampered with by Mr. *Dobbs*, my Clerk, and Surgeon. I refer to his Affidavit, Page 138 of my Vindication, which shews how industrious Mr. *Dobbs* has been to wash himself clean and throw the Dirt upon me ; for it there appears he would have engaged that honest Man, by the Hopes of succeeding to my Command, to have written down something relating to the late Voyage under Capt. *Middleton*. This was Mr. *Dobbs's* own importunate Desire, and I leave the Reader, from the Virulency of his Remarks, to determine whether it was to do me Justice. After this, in a second Visit from *Thompson* and *Wigate* †, being pressed by the latter to write down Answers to some Question or Questions, the Master suspecting a wicked Design, and refusing to answer *Thompson*, let drop this memorable Expression, *That he thought this Deponent much in the Right, till he knew upon what Consideration he was to do it*, i. e. answer the Questions. Does not this smell rank of Corruption ? Does not this speak

† Vid. Page 138 in my Vindication.

the true Characters of his Agents? Unhappily for the industrious Mr. *Dobbs*, and no doubt to the great Surprize of his Witnesses, on whom he builds, Master *Wilson* had more Regard to the Satisfaction of a clear Conscience, than to the Views of Interest; neither was he as weak and inconsiderate as the Lieutenant, for had he had no regard to Justice, yet he had too much Sense to sign any thing contradictory to his Journals and Reports; and if he had not, as they make strongly in my Favour, it would not have answered Mr. *Dobbs's* Views. But to give a full Answer to this Paragraph, Page 30, 31 of that Gentleman's Remarks, in which he seems satisfied he has convinced the World that I am both Fool and Knave, and with an Apostrophe exults in the following Words, "Is not all this Sham, Evasion, and Trick, to impose upon Mankind, &c." I shall set down a Narrative of Facts, known to be true by all my Ship's Company, nay, supported by Affidavits †, which will plainly shew that Mr. *Dobbs* has sung *Te Deum* before the Victory.

One the 3d of *August*, with some Difficulty, I got, with my Officers and some of my poor Cripples, into the eight-oared Boat, and even my Officers themselves and the Boys rowed on board with the Ship's Oars; altho' the Men, when they had got into the Boat, could handle their Oars, they could not walk upright, but went double. Our Ship's Company was in such a deplorable Condition, that we had not above two or three of our Men and Petty Officers in a Watch who could go up to hand or reef a Sail, which were always done by the Master Gunner, Carpenter, Boatwain, and Cook. What was done on board the Tender, I know not but by the Affidavits.

† Vid. *Town's*, *Van Sobrick*, and *Grant's* in my Vindication, Page 141, 142, 143, 144, and the Appendix to these Sheets, *Gay's* Affidavit.

Mr. *Dobbs* mentions two Boats a head; but the Logg and Journal take notice of no more than one; but whatever he advances must be Truth, however contrary to authentic Evidence and solemn Affidavits; the former, he would have the World believe, had been revised and altered by me to serve my own Purposes, viz. The Concealment of his imaginary Passage, to oblige the *Hudson's Bay* Company; the latter, downright Perjury to oblige me.

In answer to my recalling the Lieutenant on board, whom I ordered ashore to try the Tides, I refer my self to the Master's Query 8, where 'tis apparent that my Reason was the Danger of losing the King's Ship, had the Boat and Men been lost by the Ice. It is certain that I went on Shore, as Mr. *Dobbs* says, but I trusted the Ship to the Care of the Master, as it was more his Business in Pilot's Water than the Lieutenant's; beside, the former was acquainted with the nature of Ice, having made several Voyages to *Greenland*, &c. And farther it appears by the Council held the 8th of *August*, that I was obliged to take the Gunner, Carpenter, and Clerk, for part of the Boat's Crew, and had but three Men and a Boy with the *Indian* Linguist in the Boat with me, eight in all. Mr. *Dobbs* labours this Point of the Boat, saying the 9th, 10th, 11th and 12th, my Men were all sick again, and no Boat durst be trusted ashore, altho' it was fine Weather. This is charging me roundly upon Hear-say, for I deny, and the Journal will prove, that either on the 9th, 10th, nor 11th, we had Weather in which we could venture a Boat from the Ship, but on the contrary, we had either strong Gales, hazey Weather, or a great Sea. Farther, we had no Business on the Days specified to send the Boat on shore. On the 12th at 3 in the Morning it was moderate Weather, as we

† Vid. my Vindication.

call it. I sent the Lieutenant on Shore to try the Tides, and to see if he could water our Ships for home; yet notwithstanding he set out so early, had but three or four Leagues to Shore, and the Weather fine, it was Evening before he could reach it, the Men were so weak, tho' he had always the best Hands with him.

Mr. *Dobbs* says the Surgeon, by producing his Books, has proved, that out of 53 Men, then on board the *Furnace*, there were but eight unfit for Service, and concludes this long Paragraph in a most Gentleman-like manner, viz. "Is not his Defence here a glaring Impudence?" The Master's Answer to Query 13th, proves, all the Men and Officers know, and several of them have sworn the direct contrary to the Surgeon's Information. Nay, 'tis well known to the Admiralty, and the King's Hospitals can witness the Trouble they had with my sick Men; some I was obliged to leave at the *Orkneys*, who had lost the Use of their Limbs, and others, both Officers and Men, were discharged after we came into the River, as no longer fit for the Service.

Mr. *Dobbs*, in his next Paragraph, Page 31, promises a Specimen of his Knowledge, which appears afterwards to be in Page 38, and has given me too favourable an Opportunity to convince him of Ignorance. I hope he will excuse, me as it is necessary to my Defence, my hereafter laying hold on it, by demonstrating, as I shall in the Sequel, that he knows nothing of either the Theory or Practice of Tides or Currents. He says, almost in the Words of the Master's Answer to Query 13, that when once the Time of the Tide is fixed on Shore, and 'tis known which is Flood, and which is Ebb, by the Slacks it may be known on Board which is Flood; but then he asks, Is this the Case here? Was it not

† Vid. my Vindication, Query 13.

declared

dec
of
whi
Re
I
fou
wer
tion
him
Ho
ons,
to t
and
com
I
of J
it to
by C
be t
been
at V
Con
Diff
Chur
in th
Tide
miss
Slack
Strai
Book
see b
of th
from
the M
Jour
monf

* L
† K

declared in Council, that they had no Opportunity of knowing at the *Welcome* when they came out, which was the Flood Current ; and was not that the Reason why they were to search the Coast again ?

I answer to Mr. *Dobbs*. this was the Case ; we found by the Slacks that the former Observations were just. I will allow him, the Declaration he mentions in Council, but then I must beg the Favour of him to distinguish between our going out and coming Home. It would have been contrary to my Instructions, to have lost Time outward bound. I was not to try the Tides till I arrived at Whalebone Point, and this Resolution was taken after that, and to be complied with in our Return.

I have said in my Logg and Journal, on the fifth of *July*, I tried the Tide several Times, * and found it to run two Miles an Hour, from N. E. by E. by Compass, the Day before full Moon ; I took it to be the Flood from the Eastward ; the Tides had been tried all the Way from *Churchill* †. Off of and at *Whale Cove*, and near *Brook Cobbam*, by the Company's Sloops: There is an Hour and an half Difference in the Time of high Water, between *Churchill* and *Wager River*. We were long enough in this latter, to be certain as to the Heights of the Tides. When we came out of that River, we never missed trying every two Hours, their Directions and Slacks, all the Way as we went towards the frozen Straits ; though not often put down in the Logg-Book. When I passed by the low Beach, I could plainly see by the Ice left at high Water, what Time it was of the Tide. We were about half a Mile distant from the Shore, in 25 Fathoms Water, at six in the Morning, on the fifth Day ; as appears by the Journal. From this Account, it is plain to a Demonstration, that I neither designedly disguised the

* Lieutenant's Journal.

† *Kelsey's, Vaughan's, Naper's, Hancock's, and Smith's Journals.*

Tide at *Cape Frigid*, nor could call the Ebb the Flood. Farther it appears from the Lieutenant's Account above mentioned, that he was driven away to the Eastward after I went a Shore, with a strong Tide; indeed, he says, he knew not whether it was Flood or Ebb. Where I landed about 11 o'Clock, it had ebb'd five or six Foot by the Shore, and when we came to the Boat at about half an Hour past four, it had flow'd four Foot, as has been before mentioned. This I believe will be allowed me, by every knowing Man, to be sufficient to determine the Tide. This Account of the Tides was signed by the Gunner and Carpenter, in Council held the eighth of *August*, being written down by the Clerk; no Objections were made when either it was read or signed.

I acknowledge that I was not in *Whale Cove*, but I tried it off that Place at only three Leagues Distance. I had read the Journals (already mentioned) of Gentlemen who had been there, and had tried the Tide; and I could rely upon their Accounts, as they were Men of Judgment. Their Journals are in the Company's Possession, and it was from them I gave Mr. *Dobbs* an Account of the Tides (which I since found agree with the Tryal I made as above) long before I went upon the Discovery, and these he has published in his delightful Romance.

Mr. *Dobbs's* second Paragraph, Page 32. asserts that we quitted the Discovery on the third of *August*, when we left *Wager* Strait, an open bold Passage leading S. W. the only Course wish'd for. In Answer to the former Part, I say that we try'd all the Coast to *Brook Cobbam*, in Lat. 63°. † which Mr. *Dobbs* calls *Marble Island*, as it was agreed in Council; therefore did not give over or quit the Discovery

† Vid. Reports and Affidavits, in this Appendix and in that to my Vindication.

at *Wager River*: But, as I have said, in my Vindication, Page 23: at *Brook Cobham*, when we left that Place on the 15th. the other Part which mentions his imaginary open Passage, &c. I have already answered: But as my worthy Antagonist is apparently fond of Repetition, to oblige him, I again deny any body having mention'd to me the Tides coming from the Westward, or any Openings at Marble Island (before the Queries were sent me); as to these latter, I have, I think, demonstrated already, that I could have no Account of them from the Lieutenant; the rest of this Paragraph is already answered.

In the next Paragraph, this public spirited Gentleman, whose Zeal for his Country has unhappily engaged him in this Contest, says that I was afraid of being frozen up at my Return, &c. in *September*, but I had no such Fear upon me, when in the Company's Service (for that is implied in his Words) I did then every Year return in *September*. He then exclaims: *Is not this very prevaricating?* Does he not know I never was so far Northward in the Company's Service? Is he not sensible that a narrow Strait of a few Leagues is sooner frozen over than a large Bay? Is he not convinced by the Evidence of his own Reason, that the Progression of Ice is from the Shore? And if he has any Candour, must he not allow that the fresh Water of a River is much sooner frozen, than that of the Ocean? If these are all Facts, which must be allowed by every Body, why does he uncandidly tax me with groundless Apprehensions, when he knows in his Conscience that this was my Situation at *Wager River*? Where I then was, is in the Latitude near 66° North; the Entrance of it not above six or seven Miles over; the Water above *Deer Sound*, fresh enough for our Men both to *drink, and to make Broath of. Consequently, had I stayed,

* Vid. Affidavits, in Appendix.

as this knowing Gentleman insinuates I ought to have done, all *September*; 'tis very probable, I had lost both his Majesty's Ships, and the Lives of his Subjects intrusted to my Care, and have perished with them: In what then have I prevaricated?

Mr. *Dobbs*, in Page 32. asks me how all to the Southward of 65° had been carefully fought, &c. For none but *Button*, *Fox*, and *Scroggs*, were ever there; consequently it was never fought by many others: And to prove this Consequence, he roundly asserts that the Company's Sloops went to conceal, and not to make a Discovery. For the Truth of which the Public has this Gentleman's infallible Word, and ought therefore to give no Credit to Journals which contradict him, and would be allowed authentic Proofs against the Assertions of any other.

In Answer to his first Paragraph, Page 33. I shall only averr, that I was not privy to the Contents of any Letter, written by Mr. *Laurick*, to Mr. *Dobbs*; or to any body else in *Ireland*. The rest of it is not worth Notice.

Mr *Dobbs* in his next Paragraph; says, that fresh Water being lighter than the Salt, will be borne up for some time, and the Surface be only brackish. I should be glad to know his Opinion, how long he thinks the fresh Water would be thus borne up, in a Place eight or nine Leagues over, from sixty to eighty Fathoms deep, with strong Tides? And how comes it that Nature should not produce the same Effects, at the *Welcome*, *New Straits*; or *Repulse Bay*; in which last there is no Tide, and in all these Places, far greater Quantities of Ice and Snow, from a vast Number of Waterfalls which empty themselves into them: Yet the Contrary of Mr. *Dobbs's* Conjecture is known by Experience; for the Water is so far from being brackish, that it is equally Salt with any Part of the *Bay*. The following

ing

ing
to it
In
fity,
my
&c.
Har
cedi
and
the l
A
to p
steer
Wel
Ulir
very
" C
" an
" D
" w
"
" in
" bl
" w
" fo
" y
" N
N
Part
Cour
Floo
pafs.
Tide
they
T
Dobb
mirac
by m

ing Paragraph is already answered ; and the next to it is of no manner of Importance.

In Page 34. this Gentleman charges me with Fal-
sity, and Invention ; and insinuates I did not follow
my Instructions, that I might impose on the Public,
&c. As 'tis possible these Sheets may fall into the
Hands of Persons who may not have the two pre-
ceding Books : I beg leave to insert a Part of them,
and shall then refer myself to the Judgment of
the Public.

After having pass'd *Hudson's Straits*, I was ordered
to proceed to *Cary Swan's Nest* ; and then to
steer North Westerly, so as to fall in with the North
West Land, at Sir *Thomas Roe's Welcome*, or *Ne
Ultra*, near the Lat. of 65° North. Here follow the
very Words, " You are there to make the best
" Observations you can of the Height, Direction
" and Course of the Tides ; Bearing of the Lands ;
" Depths and Soundings of the Sea and Shoals
" with the Variation of the Needle.

" When you come up with Whale Bone Point,
" in 65° , you are to try the best Passage, in dou-
" bling that Land whether to Eastward or West-
" ward, in Case it be an Island ; and on which side
" soever you meet the Tide at Flood, to direct
" your Course, so as to meet the Tide whether
" North Westerly, or South Westerly".

Now can this Gentleman be understood in any
Part of these Instructions, for the Direction of my
Course ; but in the Part of meeting the Tide of
Flood, since he has taken in 26 Points of the Com-
pass. With Regard to the Frozen Straits, the high
Tides contained in it, and the rest of this Paragraph,
they shall be answered in the Sequel.

The first Paragraph, Page 35. we have Mr.
Dobbs's Word, that the Master denied before the Ad-
miralty his knowing any thing of the Tide and Straits
by me mentioned. And he offers us the same Se-
curity

curity for the full Answer afterwards given by the Master, being all Hear-say, upon the Faith he reposed in me. I believe the Public from any other than Mr. *Dobbs*, would expect better Authority than a bare Assertion. The full Answer Mr. *Dobbs* let us know is of no use to me: For by comparing that of the Clerk, with the Account and Draught sent by the Gunner, &c. against that I have set down in my Logg and Journal, my frozen Strait is proved a meer Fiction. With regard to the Clerk's Evidence, I think he is a very improper Witness, as he is no Judge not to use a harsher Expression. As to the Gunner's Draught, I have two Reasons to doubt it's being genuine: The first, because the Man bears a very honest Character, and the second, because he contradicts what he himself signed (being called into the Council held the eighth of *August*) when it was read to him by the Clerk, in presence of the other signing Officers*.

The Gunner's Draught, which Mr. *Dobbs* imagines makes in Favour of him, has on the contrary, opened twice as much more room for the Tides and Whales, and an open Channel as wide as the great Channel of the frozen Straits; and makes *Cape Frigid* only an Island, lying in the Way of the main Channels. I cannot but acknowledge the Designers of this Draught have shewn great Judgment, and have given the Public convincing Proofs of their Capacity: For instead of stopping up the frozen Straits, and leaving no Passage for Tides and Whales, they have given them as much room again, and have made these two Channels round both Ends of their Island †, to run into one. I refer my Reader to the Sequel for an Answer to the rest of this Paragraph, and the following Pages as far as the Paragraph; in which he obliges the World,

* Vid. Query and Answer five, Appendix.

† Vid. Remarks, p. 145.

and in particular all Mariners, with an accurate Description of *Hudson's Bay*; and Directions what Courses to steer; on which I shall not here make any Observation: I shall only take notice of that Part, where I apprehend he leaves off, to fall foul according to Custom, upon my Character, at the End of Page 49. Tho' in the Interim, I shall reply to such things as do not regard the Doctrine of Tides, &c. within the Compass of those Pages: In that of 39 he says, I tax him with having misrepresented the Affair of the Boat's being carried out of the River by the Ebb Current. I still continue in affirming that Charge. I have already made, and shall in the Sequel make this Misrepresentation more plainly appear. Whenever this Gentleman asserts, and cannot prove, he has no other Way of coming off than by screening himself under the Admiralty Board, as he does here, and attesting his two credible Witnesses, the Lieutenant, or his own Minutes. What I advance is supported by Facts, authentick Vouchers, the Affidavits of Persons of Character; by Experience, long Practice, and a thorough Knowledge of Sea Affairs. I do not offer to impose upon the Publick my own Suppositions, Reasonings and Conclusions, drawn from bare Surmises; neither do I expect they should rely on my Word for any thing I assert: Tho' Mr. *Dobbs* thinks the World under an Obligation to give an entire Credit to his; how else would he venture to affirm, without offering the least Proof, that the Master gave a different Answer in Writing to what he had told him before the Surgeon and Clerk, Men entirely at his Devotion, and, I had almost said, under his Direction.

In Page 40 of that Gentleman's Remarks he acknowledges, that he wrote upon Hearsay; and this I think is owning a very great Disingenuity, tho' he endeavours to salve it, saying, his Information may not have been wrong, as the Spring-tides are not at

the highest till three Days after the Full of the Moon. But by what Rule can Mr. *Dobbs* make out the Probability of the Velocity of the Current, as he calls the Tide, augmenting one half in four Days? for I try'd it the Day before the Full; and he acknowledges Spring-tides are at the highest three Days after the full Moon.

He says, in Page 41, the Reason of my recalling the Lieutenant, after I had ordered him at the low Beach to try the Tide, was my Fear of his discovering the Truth. This is a Repetition, and a very bold Assertion, such a one as I have already evinced entirely groundless. In answer to the rest of the Paragraph, first with regard to what he builds upon the Lieutenant's Account, viz. that the Tide had ebb'd two Foot, I shall make it evidently appear it was a Mistake and Absurdity in the Clerk's Transcribing. The Copy from the Logg to the Journal, and what I sent to Mr. *Dobbs* was sign'd by me without examining it as closely as I should have done, had I been either conscious of having acted otherwise than became a Man of Probity, or had had the least Suspicion of my Character being thus unfairly attack'd. With relation to what is said of my checking the Boatmen and Clerk, 'tis pure Fiction; and the Remainder of the Paragraph is already answer'd.

I am charged with false Reasoning, in Mr. *Dobbs's* first Paragraph, Page 42. I say my Reasons are founded upon certain Observations, on the Knowledge of all who are acquainted with Sea-affairs; and not like his, which are almost always upon Suppositions and Probabilities.

If Mr. *Dobbs* would not have it believed that the Tides flow from *Wager* River, it would have been kind in him to have marked it off in his correct Chart, with which he has oblig'd the Publick. He desires me to shew that he hinted any thing like this. Why then does he mention the Probability of, or give his
Opinion

Opinion that there is, a Southwestern Tide? No one can suppose a Gentleman of Mr. *Dobbs's* Capacity writes without Meaning; but Obscurity is often a great Help to a bad Cause, and a common Subterfuge with all Cavillers.

Mr. *Dobbs's* first Paragraph, Page 43, is fully answered in my *Vindication*, Page 154; but Mr. *Dobbs* says, that this material Point of the Discovery, *viz.* of the Lieutenant's Tide and Opening, I have taken no notice of in my Defence: Hence 'tis plain Mr. *Dobbs* will not allow my Appendix to be any Part of my Defence. Is not this childish Equivocation? I had, as that Gentleman says, the Lieutenant's Draught and Account from the Admiralty; true; and I treat it with that Contempt it merits.

Mr. *Dobbs's* elaborate Manner of unfolding the Lieutenant's envelop'd Meaning is, I think, mean, but not meanless. I shall expose in the Sequel the Falsities he has therein introduced, and the Subterfuges he has been obliged to make use of, with Design to impose on the Publick, and blacken my Character.

In Part of the Lieutenant's Answer to Query the 20th, contained in the same Paragraph, he explains, by way of Parenthesis, what he would have the World believe the Lieutenant meant; tho' he has not the least Ground for so doing from that Officer's Words, which are, as he has printed them, that "the Captain did not discourage him from making any "Discovery" (in *Wager River*); which Parenthesis is Mr. *Dobbs's* Addition, and an unjust Insinuation that I did discourage him (*viz.* the Lieutenant) from making Discoveries elsewhere. Do such low Artifices, such mean and ungentlemanlike Insinuations become one of Mr. *Dobbs's* Character? And do they not betray his Cause and Design very bad and unwarrantable, when he is oblig'd to have recourse to them, to support the one and carry on the other?

That Gentleman, when he quoted Part of *Mackbeth's* Affidavit, Page 45, had he acted openly, and without Design to conceal the Truth, would at the same time have given the Reason for that Part of *Mackbeth's* Oath which he calls an Evasion: It was to contradict the Lieutenant, Surgeon, Clerk, and Accounts given to me by Landmen, which I transmitted to Mr. *Dobbs*, as he mentions, in my Letter of the 20th of *January* 1737-8, which were only upon Hearsay: Wherefore I could not be afraid of their being contradicted, as now they are, by the above Deponent, who was five Years at *Churchbil*, a Seaman, in the Company's Service; and by the Master and Mate of a Sloop belonging to *Churchbill*, who have traded there many Years, and whose Accounts agree with that Part of *Mackbeth's* Affidavit mentioned. I refer my Reader for the Whole to my Vindication, Page 140.

He says again, in the first Paragraph of Page 46, that I have allowed there is no Tide North of *Mill Isles*, near my new frozen Streights; and that I now bring a vast strong Tide thro' it. Is not this very disingenuous, to confound what I formerly advanced from the Account given by his favourite Author Captain *Fox*, &c. with what I have since learned by Observation? Mr. *Dobbs* knows as well as I, and has owned it in one of his Letters †, that what I formerly allowed was not from my own Knowledge. But his Business is to blacken me, and he is therefore more industrious to envelope than to lay open the Truth; and in this, I cannot but own, he shews a good deal of Art and Industry.

Mr. *Dobbs*, in his third Paragraph, Page 46, catches at the Particle *as*, to prove me guilty of Falsity. Indeed that Particle was incautiously used, and does imply that *Button* and *Fox* had been on that Coast several Years. Had Mr. *Dobbs* been a candid Anta-

† *Vide* his, dated at *Lisburn*, October 20, 1742.

gonist,

gonist, he would have allow'd this Particle an Inadvertency, by my being particular in naming the Number of Voyages made by *Kelsey*, &c. which he would have owned a fair Distinguishing between the two former and these latter; but, to use his own Words, a drowning Man will catch at Straws. He goes on in the same Paragraph and avers, that the Company wanted to prevent, not to make Discoveries; and quotes again my Letter abovementioned to support this Assertion: My Words are, " It would not be prudent in me to quit their (*viz.* the Company's) Employment upon an Uncertainty; and if they should come to the Knowledge of my having any Intention to accept of such an Offer, (*viz.* the going upon a Discovery) I have too much Reason to apprehend they would immediately discard me. So what I now write being unknown to them, I rely on your Honour will not be divulged to my Prejudice. In short, I believe the Company think it their Interest, rather to prevent than forward new Discoveries in that Part of the World, and for that Reason will not suffer any of our Journals to be made publick. ||" Now I would ask Mr. *Dobbs*, whether he has published this Letter with an Intent to do me Service? If it is not, as I believe the World will be apt to think, he proves that my depending upon his Honour was relying upon a broken Reed. In his Preface he has endeavoured to avoid the Reproach of so ungentlemanlike a Proceeding, by a Jesuitical Addition; saying, I desired he would not publish my Correspondence with him, and what Observations I should give him, *while I continued in the Company's Service*. These last Words, which limit a Time for this Secrecy, he cannot produce in any of my Letters; and I affirm it is an evasive Insertion. That Part of my Letter which he thinks pinches me, and on which he grounds his Assertion, has neither

|| See what is before said of this Letter.

the Effect he hopes, nor will it be of Service to him : I am still of the same Opinion, and my Reasons are these ; They had already lost one Ship and a Sloop, with both their Companies, and one Sloop, whose Company was saved, since the Year 1719 † . In 1722, *Scroggs* was sent by the Company, who went as far as *Button's Ne ultra* only. Therefore as they had Ground, at least in their Opinion, to imagine the farther Attempt of a Discovery fruitless, they had no Inclination to hazard again Mens Lives, and large Sums of Money ; and no doubt were unwilling that others should attempt it, as it might be a Cloak for Interlopers, and hurt their Trade. Having, as he thinks, by my Letter supported his Assertion, he from thence concludes, that what *Kelsey* knew by his *Indians* was not to be divulged. But this Conclusion falls to the Ground, without he can prove, by diving into my Thoughts, that my Reasons for their being more likely to prevent than forward a Discovery was, from their clandestine Views : But this I could not think, since, as I have already said, I do not apprehend the Discovering of a Passage thro' *Hudson's Bay* to the Western *American Ocean* could any way interfere with or be prejudicial to, the Company's Trade. Mr. *Dobbs* proceeds, in the same Paragraph, and taxes me with Falsity, denying that I ever discouraged him, so contrary to it, I gave him Hopes ; and refers to my Letter. I think what I have already said fully evinces what Mr. *Dobbs* here denies : And with regard to my Letters, the Encouragement they mentioned is, what I gathered from Journals and Accounts before I set out, and after I found him so obstinately bent on, so infatuated with, the Probability of a Passage ; both these, and my Observations upon them, were the Effects of my Complaisance to this Gentleman, who requested of me to give him what Lights I could, even after I refused to go upon the

† *Vide* their Letter to the Admiralty.

Discovery

Discovery myself. Can he call this giving him Encouragement? Or, if he still persists to term it so, can he say it is a gentlemanlike Return for my Endeavours to oblige him? His charging me with Cant is below Notice; and the rest of this long Paragraph is fully answered.

Mr. *Dobbs*, Page 47, thinks he has good Ground, from the Report made by the Surgeon and Clerk, again to tax me with Falsity: The Words to which he refers in this Report are in the second and third Paragraph, No. 40. in his Appendix to his Remarks, (and doubtless must be allowed a thorough Confutation of my Account from the *Indians* and *Norton*). His two Witnesses say, *Norton* has several times reported, that as far as he travelled he saw nothing but broken Lands and Islands, from 60° to the Extent of his Journey; and that the native *Indians* he had then with him gave him a very good Account of a Copper Mine, &c. In the third Paragraph, one of these honest Witnesses, which of them I know not, says the *Indians* we took in at *Cchurchill* gave me (these are his very Words) “ a particular and more confirmative Account than Mr. *Norton*’s.” Now I would fain know how this worthy Gentleman can be assured that he was well informed of *Norton*’s genuine Account; for he durst not venture to say he had it from him, tho’ he would insinuate as much; his Words are, “ to confute this, (*viz.* what Captain *Middleton* had reported) it has been several times reported by “ the said *Norton*,” &c. To whom? *Norton* had left *Cchurchill* before we got thither; and I believe they have too much Modesty to say they had any Acquaintance with him in *England*, or elsewhere: Consequently Part of this Confutation is at best but Hearsay; it may be Invention, as ’tis evident the other Part is, with regard to the Northern *Indians* particular and more confirmative Account. I suppose the Surgeon here speaks; for his Report, N^o 40 in the Remarks,

does not distinguish to which the more particular and confirmative Account was given ; I should be glad he would acquaint the Publick, in what Language he and these *Indians* conversed : I have already shewn it was impossible for him, the Surgeon, to understand their Language, tho' he has published a Vocabulary of it, which will convince the World what Credit his Evidence deserves. *John Butler*, † the only *Englishman* living who understands the Northern *Indian* Language, has carefully examined this curious Work, printed at the End of *Mr. Dobbs's* Account of the Countries adjoining to *Hudson's Bay*, &c. and he avers it is all false, and a Fiction to impose on the Publick. If this Informer says, he conversed with the *Indians* in *English*, the Ship's Company can vouch they understood it not ; if his Information was by Signs, they hardly can be thought a more particular and confirmative Account than *Mr. Norton's*, or even any Account at all : But they mark'd out, it seems, upon the Surgeon's Table the Track of Land, or Confines of their Country. Allowing these *Indians* to be as good Geographers as this Witness makes them, how does he know that what they marked out upon his Table was the Track of Land, or Confines of their Country ? 'Tis evident, by what I have already said, they could not understand one another. For aught this Witness knows, they mark'd out some other Country ? But I am fully of Opinion they mark'd out none at all ; and I believe the World will think this most probable, both from the Ignorance of the Northern *Indians*, and their choosing to give their Accounts to the Surgeon, preferably to me or to my Lieutenant ; for tho' they are ignorant of Arts and Sciences, yet they are not void of common Sense, and that would make them easily distinguish who were the chief Officers, and suggest to them, that such were the properest Persons to be informed.

† *Vide* his Attestation.

As

As to my Letter of *October 1739*, to which Mr. *Dobbs* refers; what is it more than an Account of Mr. *Norton's* Opinion, and of what he informed me; on which, I say, this confirms that the two Seas must unite. Now, on the Whole, how has he proved me guilty of a Falſity? What Reason has he given that I ſhould loſe my Credit with the World; that I ſhould think I dealt with blind People or Children? Or how has he made it appear that *Norton* ſaid otherwiſe than what I reported, by his Reference to Meſſ. *Thompson* and *Wigate's* Account?

In his firſt Paragraph of Page 48, he charges me with inserting a great deal more than was in my Manuſcript. Were I as much diſappointed, and, in conſequence of it, as angry as Mr. *Dobbs*, I ſhould retort his own Dialect, and ſay, this is falſe. I averr I have not printed more than what I gave in to the Admiralty in Manuſcript; though 'tis poſſible Mr. *Dobbs* did not immediately receive it: That Manuſcript was referred to him by their Lordſhips; but his Friend, or Acquaintance, not to call him his Agent, Mr. *Smith*, took the Liberty to open the Packet, whether it was ſealed or not I cannot ſay, and the Contents of Pages 43 and 44 of my Vindication, being in a looſe Leaf, were taken out: *Wigate* gave me an Account of what that and *Rankin's* Letter contained; and Mr. *Smith* looked into that Packet; nay *Wigate* confeſſed a few Days after, that he alſo looked into it at Mr. *Smith's* Accompting-houſe. I don't queſtion but they will both deny this, Mr. *Smith* having poſitively denied his deſiring me to write to Mr. *Dobbs*, and give him Hopes of a Paſſage, though I thought otherwiſe, is a ſufficient Ground for this Apprehenſion with regard to him; and I have as good Reason to doubt Mr. *Wigate's* being over tender of wounding the Truth. I am ready to make Affidavit of what I aſſert; poſſibly they may not be
fo

so free with an Oath ; and, if they deny the Substance of what I here advance, I call upon them to seal their Negation in the same solemn Manner.

At the Bottom of Page 49, where Mr. *Dobbs*, as I apprehend, is closing his Instructions for the Benefit of those who sail through *Hudson's Straits* and into the Bay, (an eternal Obligation he has lain on all Mariners) he says, as to crossing the Bay, 'tis an Intimidation of mine, because there is no Necessity for it in going to the North-westward ; indeed if you winter at *Churcbill*, you must then cross the Bay. No doubt this Gentleman, in his easy Chair at home, is much more able to give Instructions than I dare pretend to be, who had but 23 Years Experience of this Bay. Tho' with some this may remain a Doubt ; and others may not hesitate at saying he would make but a poor Pilot for the Safety of this Trade, and that he is not at all acquainted with the Difficulties which occur in this Navigation ; such, as that till within these 10 Years we were not allowed to come round the N. End of *Mansel's Island*, or between that and *Carey's Swans Nest*, not even homeward bound ; nay it is a hundred to one if we are not lock'd up with Ice when outward bound, as has been often experienc'd by all Masters in that Trade, who, after having been hemm'd in several Days, could not get clear from the Incumbrance of Ice, till to the Southward of *Southampton*. All the North Bay, between the N. End of *Mansel's*, *Nottingham*, *Mill Isles*, *Sea-horse Point*, and the North Main, are the Places last clear of Ice ; and possibly Traders to the Bay, who might entertain such an ill Opinion of Mr. *Dobbs's* Instructions, might refer him for the Truth of the above Facts to his Oracle Captain *Fox*. Now as all these Shores are commonly lined with Ice till the latter End of *July*, and sometimes till the Middle of *August*, it would be kind in Mr. *Dobbs* to inform such as shall hereafter go upon

upon the Discovery, how they must come to the West Side of the Bay without crossing it, if they have not *Gulliver's Flying Island*.

He goes on and informs the Navigators, that they have no reason to believe that I was never able to arrive at the Factory before the 20th of *August* in 23 Voyages, because, accidentally, in his Majesty's Ships, I fate out later than any of the Company's Ships ever did, by a Month (which, by the bye, is a Mistake of Mr. *Dobbs's*) and arrived at *Cburchill* the 9th of *August*, I answer with the old Proverb, *One Swallow never makes a Summer*, as a Proof, that Credit ought to be given to what I have advanced, and which he says deserves none, I refer to some Journals I have by me, of which the Curious may have, whenever they please, the Inspection. I have left them at the *Union Coffee-house* in *Cornhill*.

As I have now been upon his Instructions to Mariners, I beg leave by the bye to observe the Effects of Disappointment and Anger, and shew what Contradictions these have made a Gentleman of fine Sense, and, as is apparent from this Contest, of great Learning and Experience, guilty. In part of the Title of his Remarks, he says the Errors of my Chart are laid open, and my Accounts of Currents, Straits, and Rivers confuted; and in Page 70 of his entertaining Romance, mixt in with some little Truth he has gathered from me to give it an Air of Consequence, he says, "As there is now a more accurate Chart published by Capt. *Middleton*, with the Islands, Soundings, Tides, and Variations, the Navigation will become less dangerous daily, &c." Now if my Chart is more accurate than any hitherto published, why does he in the Title Page of his Remarks undertake to shew the Errors I have committed in it. If my Tides are justly observed, why does he say my Accounts of Currents, which he confounds with Tides, as I have

have already shewn are confuted in his Remarks. His next Accusation in the same Paragraph and Page 50, is the harrassing my Men, who he tells us had a most miserable slavish Life, and gives these three Particulars of their ill Treatment, *viz.* the Carpenters repairing the Company's Sloops; the Armourer and his Mate working for the said Company, and the Joyners being employed within their Factory; and this I did, as he is pleased to aver, under colour of an Order. I say no; it was for his Majesty's Service that the Carpenters were employed, as it will evidently appear by a plain Narrative of Matter of Fact. A fine sailing Sloop of about 50 Tons belonging to the Company, wanted a new Keel, one was carried from *England* and had lain two Years in the Country, but the Carpenter of the Factory had not Skill enough to put it in. I who had considered the many Accidents to which our Ships are liable in wintering, had before agreed with the Governour that in Case any should happen to either of the Ships under my Command, that this Sloop should be in Readiness, in the Spring of the Year, to supply her Place, for which Reason I undertook to direct and oversee with my two Carpenters this Repair made, which was finished in a Fortnight, while my People were digging a Dock; and I satisfied the Carpenters at my own Expencc. There were besides two large Boats of about 12 or 15 Tons each, which Mr. *Dobbs* has magnified into Sloops; the Governour lent us these to land our Provisions and Stores in the Fall, not under Colour of, but in Obedience to, the Order of the Company; and as we did them so much Damage as to render them usefess in the Spring, it was but just and reasonable to repair such Damage; nay, it was absolutely necessary for his Majesty's Service, as we should want them again in the Spring, to put what we landed on board; the Consequence of which was a greater Dispatch on our Proceedings on the
Discovery,

Dis
by
Ma
Arr
the
Use
the
plo
Arr
am
T
Loc
Me
Dob
use
for
him
as a
repa
was
muc
nien
obli
Fac
not
tage
Art
an U
no l
the
my
Ship
N
that
for l
man
Mer
and

Discovery, than we could have made without them, by at least a Fortnight. The Armourer and his Mate in the Spring of the Year, (the Company's Armourer being dead, and their Smith deprived of the Use of his Limbs) did repair, while he had the Use of their Shop, some old Fowling-Pieces, which the Governour lent me for the *Indians* whom I employed to kill fresh Provisions for the sick Men, the Arms belonging to his Majesty being distributed among my own People to shoot for themselves.

The Governour having accommodated us with Lodging for my Officers, my self, and some few Men, our Joyner, for we had but one, tho' Mr. *Dobbs* speaks in the plural, lined the Rooms we made use of, built some Cabbins, and did a little Work for the Governor, for the which he amply satisfied him. Now this lining and building Cabbins were as absolutely necessary for his Majesty's Service, as repairing the Sloops and small Arms. What Work was done for the Governor by this Joyner, was as much for the Interest of the latter as for the Convenience of the former. He says the Men who were obliged to take any thing up of the Company's Factor, paid 300 *per Cent*; I answer, that this is nothing against me; if the Company took Advantage of our Necessities, let Mr. *Dobbs* make it an Article towards dissolving their Charter. As good an Understanding as I had with them, they made no Difference between me and my Men; I paid at the same Rate for what I took of them, not only for my particular Use, but for that of his Majesty's Ships on the victualing Account.

Mr. *Dobbs*, in the same Page would insinuate, that the Company, on my Return, paid me 130 *l.* for having made Slaves of the Men under my Command, and for my Overseership; by the bye, the Men, far from making any Complaint of Cruelty and Hardship from me, vouch the contrary; the

the Carpenters were paid by the Government according to custom, and I think I am not accountable to Mr. *Dobbs* for what Money I received ; it no ways regarded the Discovery, it makes no Alteration in Tides and Currents, it forms no frozen Straits, neither does it fill up any Openings : What Purpose then of this worthy Gentleman can it serve ? Does he blow hot and cold in the same Breath, and is touched with a Tendernefs for the Company's Interest, which but a few Lines before, he taxed with Extortion.

This compassionate Gentleman accuses me with employing others of the Men in cutting down Timber, &c. One would imagine by his Charge of some thousand of Foot, that I had cut enough to build a Ship. I think he is here a little inconsistent, the Cruelty he would insinuate, was by his own Confession a necessary Work, for fitting the Ships in the Spring ; but I will give him farther Reasons why the cutting of Timber, &c. was unavoidably necessary. We could not be without Firing for the Men in the Winter ; and what properer Method could I take to get it, than that of falling Timber ? Besides, how could we possibly have cut the Ships out of the Ice without a great Quantity of Wood to shore them ? Could we otherwise have cut down to the Keel on each Side, and also under it ? Thus this Piece of Cruelty is no more than the Effect of my Care and Foresight, and a Proof of that Gentleman's Ignorance with regard to Sea Affairs.

As to the 200 *l.* paid me by the Commissioners of the Navy, which Mr. *Dobbs* says, Page 50, was for the Slavery I had imposed on my Men, I answer, that he very unfairly charges me with his own Dreams. I assert that Gentleman does not know, or which is as disingenuous, conceals what my Demands were, for which I was paid the above Sum.

† *Vide Appendix.*

were

Mr. *Dobbs* says, in the same Paragraph, he is credibly informed that the Presents I made to the Governor, were Trifles, and greatly overballanced by those I received from that Gentleman. Whoever is his Informer, I cannot think him a very credible Witness, as he must speak by guess. It is not reasonable to believe I should make a Declaration of what Presents the Governor made me ; but if his Informer is Mr. *Wigate*, he contradicts the Account which he himself wrote and Signed.

Page 51, in the same Paragraph, he expects to be informed how I could make 1400 *l.* in two Summers in the *Hudson's Bay Company's* Service. Mr. *Dobbs*, I hope will excuse me, if I think myself under no Obligation to gratify his Curiosity in this Point, as I never heard he was made Inquisitor General, an Officer we have not been harrassed by since the time of the *Romans* ; and as it is no way relative to my *Roguary* in concealing a Passage. With regard to the Computation he has made for me, it is idle and absurd ; Part of it is built upon as absurd a Charge of 120 *l. per Annum*, from the Company, which I have already refuted and proved a false and ridiculous Assertion.

In answer to his next Paragrah, Page 51, in which he taxes me with Barbarity and Folly, I ask him if he has not wilfully and knowingly, to make good his Charge and expose me to the Abhorrence of all humane People, concealed the following Truth, that the Men, who were obliged to lye both on their Backs and Bellies, at different Times, to cut the Ice from under the Ship, had Planks or Boards under them ? Are not the Concealment of this, and the taxing me with making them lye upon the Ice, a visible Proof of a strong Propensity to calumniate. He in-

† Search Comptrolers Office of the Navy.

finuates

sinuates that the cutting out the Ship was by so much the more a greater Piece of Cruelty, as it was needless ; and for the Reason that it was so, says the Factory's People, who saw this with Compassion and Amazement, never meddle with their Vessels till the Ice is broke up in the River. Now this Reason is either the Effect of Artifice or Ignorance. When the Company's Sloops do not go to the Northward, I allow that they lye in their Winter Station, till the Arrival of the Ships in *August* ; but when they go to the Northward, they are obliged to cut out as we were ; and the Sloop that wintered by us in the same Cove, was some Days a cutting out in the latter End of *June*, which both the Ship's Company can attest ; so that, as Mr. *Dobbs* says, Nature does not, till about the 14th of *June*, perform in few Days what I kept the poor Fellows labouring at for near two Months : But 'tis of Service to Mr. *Dobbs*'s Cause, not to be too scrupulous in his Assertions †. Now if this Sloop was obliged to cut out, which drew but three Foot of Water, lay high upon the Bank, and had the full Power of the Sun upon her, *a fortiori*, our Ships which drew from 7 to 11 Foot of Water, being bedded 23 Foot in the Ice and hard frozen Snow, made it necessary for us to cut them loose ; and if we had not done it, it was the Opinion of every one upon the Spot that the Ice would not have thawed under them that Year ; 'tis true, I say, it was of no Service in forwarding us, but Mr. *Dobbs* according to his wonted Ingenuity, breaks off without my Explanation of what I then meant. These are my Words : “ After all, this was of no Service in forwarding us ; for being got into the Bay, we found all the Shore lined with Ice for many Leagues, so as no Opening could be entred *.”

† Witness the first Inlet we tryed, *viz.* *Wager*, where we were jammed up with Ice three Weeks. * See the Journal.

Is it not evident from these Words, that they meant this Labour did not forward us in our Design of Discovering a Passage, by giving us an Opportunity to enter and search the Openings; but that it was of Service, must be allowed, if the preventing or keeping his Majesty's Ships a Year longer in that frozen Climate may be deemed such. I have now shewn what is the only Reason Mr. *Dobbs* can give, (*viz.* To *debar my Men from again undertaking the same Voyage.*) Why I put my People upon such a hard Task, is no Reason at all, except it is to prove that he is rather under the Direction of Passion than Reason. He tells us that *Scroggs* loaded, sailed, and got out of *Churchill River* the 20th of *June*, and the *Furnace* might have sailed out of it by the 25th, had it not been for contrary Winds. What does this Gentleman mean by his Loading, if not to throw Dust into the Eyes of the Public, by insinuating that this Loading must take up a considerable time after the River was open? If there had been any Loading, they might have taken it in Months before this Sloop was loose from the Ice. *Scroggs* went upon a Discovery, and was in his Ballast. Again, *Scroggs* sailed two Days after the time Mr. *Dobbs* has set down. I would fain ask that Gentleman, why he asserts a Fact, *viz.* that the *Furnace* might have sailed out, &c. which he knows by the Answer of one of his own Party to *Querry* * 6 was impracticable. I am afraid he was not aware of this † Answer contradicting what he has advanced in this Paragraph; if he had, I may be excused thinking, from the Candour of the Treatment he has given me throughout his Book, he would have smothered it, and foreborn printing the Queries.

First Paragraph, Page 52, Mr. *Dobbs* says the Bay was all clear from Ice, &c. otherwise the Fac-

* *Vide* Remarks.

† *Moor's* Answer.

ctory's Sloop would not have ventured in Shore among Islands and Openings. I will grant him that the Ice in the Bay, between *Whale Cove* and *Churchill*, was inconsiderable; but *Whale Cove* lying among the Islands at some Distance from the Main, is no Reason for Inlets, Straits and Rivers not being incumbered with, and impassable for Ice. The Master who succeeded to *Naper*, on his Death at *Whale Cove*, could not, for the above Reason, get much farther to the Northward than the said Cove, as may be seen by the Journal in the Company's Possession.

I do averr, notwithstanding Mr. Moor's Denial, that all the Shores within *Marble Island* were faced with Ice, and all the Bay's full to the Northward of $63^{\circ} 20'$, as may be seen in Logg and Journal; and the Bay between that and *Marble Island*, was also filled with Ice as we went out, tho' no Notice is taken of it as it is out of our Course; the *Welcome* and *Wager* were full of Ice from Side to Side till the second or third of *August*, and when we were got out of *Wager* River, the *New Strait* and *Repulse Bay* were half full, and the frozen Strait not broken up at all upon our Return the eighth of *August*, as appears by Reports, Loggs, and Journals. He is pleased to say in the same Paragraph, that my being fast in the Ice for some Days in *September*, is an intimidating Evasion; I say, 'tis a Fact that all Journals will corroborate. Captain *Spurrel* was fast off *Mansel's Islands* 'till the 10th or 12th of *October* on his Return Home, the very Voyage I wintered at *Churchill* 1721; but Mr. *Dobbs* is as little able to state Cases as he pretends to do, and as ignorant of those Seas, Coasts, and Countries, which he has romantically described in his Chart and Account of *Hudson's Bay*, as a blind Man is to judge of Colours; since he builds upon every doubtful Authority of *French* Authors, Accounts which Experience have proved

proved false, and has nothing he could assuredly rely upon, for which he has not been obliged to me; but I shall demonstrate how idle, how improbable, or rather impossible is his State of the Case: To take his own Words; he says, Page 52, "The Case is this, " If it falls calm in *September*, the Surface of that Strait is every Night overspread with a thin Covering of Ice a Quarter of an Inch thick, and consequently surrounds the Ship; yet the least Breath of Wind occasions the Ship's progressive Motion, and to break all to Pieces without any sensible Hindrance to the Ship's Passage." If this was the Case, no body would venture that Way in *September*; for if the Straits were to freeze over every calm Night, what Chance could they have for their Lives? since I my self have been becalmed there for near a Fortnight in that very Month, and freezing only a Quarter of an Inch every Night, I must have been inclosed in Ice near four Inches thick for many Leagues round, which I believe would be thought sufficient to hinder the *progressive Motion* of the Ship: But the true State of the Case is this (for that of Mr. *Dobbs* is an imaginary State of the Case) It never freezes in *Hudson's Strait*, the Bay, or in any salt Water, but first from the Shores, and is as Mr. *Dobbs* says, *progressive*. The Water must be attached to something, or it cannot freeze in the Sea; the Water that washes the Ship's Sides in her Motion will freeze, as it has a Body to fasten to, and that Ice is again a conjealed Substance, to which other Water freezes, and increases in Proportion to the Intensity of the Cold; and thus by Cohesion are formed the innumerable and immensely large Islands of Ice, generated after they are broken off from the Shore, and launched into the Straits or Ocean.

Mr. *Dobbs* charges me in the same Pharagraph with a Contradiction; first, he takes Notice that I say none but *Scroggs* could get beyond the Latitude

of 64°. I have already answer'd this, and shewn, that the poor Particle *as*, inadvertently inserted, by my Amanuensis, is the only Ground he has for his Triumph. I refer my Reader to Page 52, not to tire him, as Mr. *Dobbs* has me, with Repetitions. In the same Paragraph, Page 52, he taxes me with a Contradiction in the following Words: " In his last Paragraph, Page 44, he says, if there was no Ice to prevent a Ship's passing, about the latter End of *August*, yet the Gales of Wind and drifting Snow would put it out of all human Power to handle a Sail, or keep the Deck: Yet look on the other Side of the same Leaf, and you will find he tells you, that many Years Ships cannot pass *Hudson's Strait* outward bound before the latter End of *August*. Upon the Whole, I think no two Pages, ever printed, can match these two of his, Pages 43 and 44, there being no less than 15 Falsties, Evasions, and Incoherences, in the Compass of 58 successive Lines." Now where is this Contradiction, but in Mr. *Dobbs's* disingenuous Quotation, who has taken care to conceal from his Readers a Supposition on which this Impossibility of handling a Sail, or keeping the Deck, about the latter End of *August*, is founded.

I say, * Page 43, that " many Years we cannot pass the Straits, &c. before the Time last mentioned, without incredible Fatigue, and incessant Danger both of our Lives and Ships." All Mariners, who have used the Trade, and to whom I appeal as well as to Journals, know this to be Fact. The next Paragraph to this I beg Leave to transcribe, and two or three Lines of the following, *viz. Now supposing there was another Strait on the Western Coast of Hudson's † Straits, or between Latitude 61° and*

* *Vide* my Vindication, Page 43.

† This is a Mistake of the Press; it should have been *Bay*, as is visible from what follows.

63°, and that this Strait was about as long and as wide as that.

In the first place, there could be no entering it before the latter End of August for Ice, whether from England or your Wintering-place in the Bay; for tho' we got out * at Churchill River by the first Day of July last Year, &c. I afterwards, in Page 44, say, Now, all this well weighed, what Chance have Ships for passing such a Strait as we have supposed?

But grant there was no Ice to prevent a Ship's passing about the latter End of August; yet at that Season the Winter begins to set in here, with hard Galcs, and such Quantities of drifting Snow, that it is out of all human Power to handle a Sail, or keep the Deck. This Quotation, which is visibly a Supposition, Mr. Debbs makes the Ground of no less than 15 Falsities, Evasions and Incoherences, in the Compass of 58 successive Lines. Now if that Gentleman's Disappointment and consequential Anger have left him any Regard for Truth, must he not be oblig'd to acknowledge, that either he does not understand what he reads, which I dare say no body as yet thinks, or is a very unfair Antagonist?

Upon the Lieutenant's Report, Page 53, he takes a great deal of Pains, he strains, he labours hard, and does not hesitate at wounding the Truth, to render what was dark and unintelligible, if possible, still more obscure and perplexed; his whole Paragraph is *ignotum per ignotius*. I would ask this Gentleman, whether in that Report there is the least Mention of the Variation being allowed? Whether, on the contrary, it is not every where said, *by the Compass* †? And whether it was ever known that Bearings were taken with an Allowance for the Variation? And what other Reason that Gentleman can assign for

* Misprinted; which should have been *out of*, as is evident from the Account of the Voyage.

† *Vide* that Report.

making the Lieutenant speak sometimes with and sometimes without the Variation, but that of helping a bad and puzzled Cause? I deny the Lieutenant either spoke or thought of Variation: I assert the contrary; and appeal to the Report. Allowance for it is against the Practice of all Mariners, in observing the Bearings of Land; and it is only taken notice of in laying them down in Charts, or in correcting our Course. In the next place, neither at the time, nor for a Week after, had we † observed the Variation in that River. I do not expect Mr. *Dobbs* will speak out; wherefore I beg Leave to shew the Reason for this Variation: It is to help a Blunder, by gaining him three Points and a Quarter of the Compass. But this unluckily does not answer the intended Purpose; for it brings the Object below the Station of the Ship nearer to the Mouth of *Wager* River. After all, this long Account of Ice, Tides, and Channels, Cove, and high Bluff, is meer Amusement. The Truth is, he observed the Bearings by Compass, and he expressly says it, and, as I have already averred, it has always been customary. The S. by E. Bearings by Compass, allowing 35° for the Westerly Variation, makes them S. 46° Easterly, or S. E. Easterly; and his Bluff about three or four Leagues below the Place where he stood, and on the same Side of the River, and not on the opposite Side of the River *Wager*, as I suppose Mr. *Dobbs* would have it thought*. That
Gentleman.

† *Vide* the Logg, Monday July 26.

* The Lieutenant says (in his first Report given in July 16, 1743, Page 153, printed in my Vindication) the River is 12 or 13 Leagues over, from the E. to S. W. Side; and in the last Line of the same Report, he makes it only 9 or 10 Leagues broad. He has since corrected this from my Vindication; and, in his second Report, says the River is about six or seven Leagues over. Allowing his Emendation, how is it possible, at the Distance of 18 or 21 Miles, he could see an Opening clear of Ice? which I suppose he meant, when he said he saw *Ice clear of an Opening*; for all the Ice he saw was clear of Openings, except
what

Gentleman would also insinuate, that the main Channel of the said River *Wager* was clear from Ice ; but in fact it was in *Deer Sound* that the Ice broke up : His Counter-tide was occasion'd by the Point the Lieutenant stood upon, and the Islands about it, which lay within the Entrance of *Deer Sound* || . Now I leave it to the Publick to judge, whether, with all the Pains Mr. *Dobbs* has taken, together with the Help of a little Fiction, he has clear'd up this unintelligible Report, which he thinks he understands, and I dare say can be understood by no one else. But the Lieutenant's second Report contradicts Mr. *Dobbs*, as he expressly every where mentions the Bearings set by Compass.

Mr. *Dobbs*, in his next Paragraph, refers to the Lieutenant's original Report : Not to tire my Reader with Repetitions, I shall take notice of this in the Sequel, where the Publick will be fully convinc'd that my Detractors have not been over scrupulous ; as they have inserted and altered, wherever they thought their Emendations necessary. But their Malice to wound me has been prevented, by their Ignorance of the Means. I now refer my Reader to the two Answers of the second Query : As for the rest of the Paragraph, Page 55, 'tis answer'd.

Mr. *Dobbs*'s Assertion about what I told him with relation to 5000*l.* depends entirely upon his Veracity, unsupported by any Evidence ; and I as positively deny, as he asserts.

This long Paragraph is little other than so much

what he saw in *Deer Sound*, and in the Openings made by some Islands within a few Miles of him. Had their Opening been directly opposite to *Deer Sound* on the West Side of the River, as my Antagonists would have it, it must bear by Compass W. 15° S. as *Wager* River runs N. 15° W. which is 86° Difference from their Opening opposite to *Deer Sound*. A very trifling Blunder this, of 86° in taking the Bearings.

|| *Vide* the Chart.

Dirt, which Mr. *Dobbs* throughout his whole Performance has bestow'd on me with a very liberal Hand. With regard to Mr. *Allan*, it is no more than a Proof of Mr. *Dobbs's* great Industry to clear up his own Reputation, after he has put the Publick upon a fruitless Expence, by making use of every Mean to throw the Miscarriage of that Voyage upon me; for I could not drop a Word, even in Jest, which some or other of his Spies, plac'd about me, did not carry to him, and he did not interpret as a Matter of Consequence. I am oblig'd therefore to explain what I said to Mr. *Allan* as a Ridicule on Mr. *Dobbs's* Infatuation with regard to the Discovery of a Passage: He was then endeavouring (and till very lately continued his Sollicitation) to engage the Government in a second Trial; but as he did not find them much inclin'd to gratify him, I said to Mr. *Allan* and his Partner, that if Mr. *Dobbs* could not gain his Point without pretending a Passage, I could put him in the Way how he might yet find one: I did not explain myself farther, whither that Passage might lead; but I had my Eye upon an Entry discover'd by *Davis*, which might possibly cross *Terra del Labrador*, and afford a Passage into *Hudson's Bay*. Mr. *Dobbs* has made a double Use of this private Conversation with one of his intimate Friends, to prove me first a Knave and then a Fool. I myself acquainted that Gentleman with the Track of Land lying between *St. Lawrence's River* and *Hudson's Straits*, within which Compass lies *Davis's* Discovery; and hinted, as it belong'd to no civilized Nation, a lucrative Trade for Furs, Cod-fish, and Whale, might be there carried on; and I find he has since made this Account his own, and with it embellish'd his entertaining Romance, Page 4, & seq.

Mr. *Allan*, some time after the above Conversation, meeting me in *Cheapside*, said he had acquainted Mr. *Dobbs* with what I had advanced to him about a
 Passage,

Passage. I asked him, what Passage? He answer'd, the Passage we had been to discover. To which I reply'd, he was quite mistaken. He then let me know Mr. *Dobbs* would call upon him as a Witness, with relation to the Discourse mention'd. I answer'd, that, as he was upon the Catch, it was necessary I should explain myself; and accordingly did, as I now have. I am willing to believe Mr. *Allan* told this also to Mr. *Dobbs*; and if he did, that Gentleman, had he acted with Candour, ought to have been satisfy'd. With regard to *Thompson* and *Wigate*, what I said is misrepresented. I have often told Mr. *Allan*, if he had any Regard for Mr. *Dobbs*, he ought to let that Gentleman know, that if he relied upon the Information of *Wigate* and *Thompson*, and pushed things to Extremities, he would hurt his Character; for tho' Falshood might march in the Front, Truth would certainly bring up the Rear, and Disgrace would fall upon her Enemies: Mr. *Orr*, Partner with Mr. *Allan*, may possibly remember my making use of some such Expression; and no one will call that Gentleman's Veracity in question. Mr. *Gill* and Mr. *Lanrick* have said the same thing, both to Mr. *Allan* and Mr. *Orr*; and it was their real Opinion, grounded on their believing (which they have often declared, and since given under their Hands) that *Wigate* and *Thompson* were the worst of Men. Mr. *Allan* seemed angry at this Intimation, but Mr. *Orr*, concerned and sorry. These two Gentlemen, *Gill* and *Lanrick*, were both Neighbours and Friends of Mr. *Dobbs*, and have a Dependance on him; their Regard to Truth and Justice is the sole Reason that could have influenced them in my Favour, as it may possibly prove contrary to their own Interest.

I pass over his Repetition of Bribery, as already answer'd †.

† *Hudson's Bay*. Letter.

Mr. *Dobbs* says my Answer to the Charge of be-
 friending the Company, and concealing a Passage,
 without any one discovering such Concealment, is
 entirely false: This Falsity appears by the Surgeon's
 and Clerk's Affidavits, their Answers before the Ad-
 miralty, and by the Confirmation of the Lieutenant.
 I hope he will excuse me, if I here take the Liberty
 to contradict him, and affirm my Answer in my Vin-
 dication is Truth, and nothing but the Truth; and
 if I here follow his Example, and set my Affirma-
 tion against the Affidavits of his two Witnesses and
 the Confirmation of the Lieutenant, tho' with more
 Charity than Mr. *Dobbs* has treated the Persons who
 have appeared in my Defence, and sealed the Truth
 of what they advanced with their Oaths: I will not
 tax the Surgeon and Clerk with wilful and corrupt
 Perjury, or the Lieutenant with confirming a pre-
 pensed and deliberate Falsity; I am willing rather to
 believe, what they have sworn and said were the Ef-
 fects of a Mistake; for one Letter changed will make
 this terrible Accusation fall to the Ground. My
 Words were, (and they are confirmed by Mr. *Moor*,
 who is a Partizan of Mr. *Dobbs*) that I *could* make the
 Passage, &c *. Mr. *Dobbs*, as it is more to his Pur-
 pose, in summing up this Gentleman's Evidence,
 Page 84, Article 12 †, has changed the *c* to *w*,
 saying, that he, Mr. *Moor*, had heard me more than
 once say I *would* be able to make the Passage; where-
 as Mr. *Moor* declares, Page 165. of Remarks, that
 he had heard Captain *Middleton* say more than once,
 that he *could* makè the Passage, and no Man on board
 of him should know whether there was one or not.
 Now is it probable I should say I *would be able*? Or,
 if I had said so, would any one have understood me?
 This *would* refer to a Time past when I made such

* *Vide* Page 165. Query 4. of Mr. *Dobbs*'s Remarks.

† *Vide* his Remarks.

Declaration ;

Declaration; we must therefore suppose I said (speaking then in the Time present) *I will be able*; which is downright Nonsense, or implies my Design of going to School again to make myself able: So that granting that I actually said *I would be able*, Mr. *Dobbs*, with all his Art and unfair Quotation, can make no more of it, than that I talk'd like one of his Countrymen.

What I said was to take down the Vanity of his two Affidavitmen, and of the Lieutenant, (who has confirm'd what they have sworn) when they vainly boasted their Knowledge, by reproaching them with their Ignorance, Stupidity, and Aversion from being instructed. I solemnly declare, to the best of my Remembrance, I never thus reproach'd them in the Hearing of any who belong'd to the Company: But grant I had expos'd them before all the Factory, one would think Mr. *Dobbs*, who has given throughout his Remarks such flagrant Proofs of having a strong Relish for Calumny, might excuse a little Ill-nature in me, especially when accompany'd with Detraction, if not allowing a Knowledge they did not possess can deserve that Appellation. I need say no more on this Article; and to his charging me with befriending the Company, I have sufficiently answered that in my Vindication, Page 49; however, to satisfy Mr. *Dobbs*, allowing him again *wou'd* for *cou'd*, 'tis only a Proof that I design'd to act like an honest and grateful Man to my former Masters: It is visible, from their Letters to the Lords of the Admiralty †, that they apprehended an interloping Trade would be carried on to their Prejudice; and, as I was resolv'd to suffer none, I might very well say I would be a better Friend to the Company than they expected. I could give a stronger Reason, were Sir *Charles Wager* alive, and could be appeal'd to: But I shall not copy

† *Vide* Appendix.

Mr. *Dobbs*, by advancing every where Assertions unsupported. However, it is reasonable to believe, had I discovered a Passage of which Advantage could have been made, that I might have had Opportunities of being more serviceable to the Company than either they or any of their Servants abroad could expect, especially since Mr. *Dobbs* had all along given me such strong Hopes of a Royal Grant in Fee-Tail for all the Lands that should be discovered, though he is now pleas'd to deny it. In the last Line or two of the same Paragraph, Page 58, he tells the Publick, that the Words above spoken occasioned the Vigilance of his three Witneses, who were upon the Watch the Remainder of the Voyage. Poor, honest Men! I would fain know what Effect their being upon the Watch could produce? Had they lain all their three Heads together, could they have detected me? No; would I have acted unfairly, they were very improper Men to expose my Practises. Two of these very vigilant Gentlemen, the Surgeon and Clerk, slept all Watches, as the whole Ship's Company can prove; and they, who scarcely ever appear'd upon Deck, must be but poor Spies upon me, even allowing them Capacity and Knowledge, a Compliment I can make to neither: As to the Lieutenant's Genius and Skill, I shall say nothing; the Gentlemen in the Navy, who have had more Experience of him, are much more proper to speak to his Character.

The Beginning of his next Paragraph, with relation to Mr. *Smith's* Agency, is already answer'd in Page 13. With regard to the Goods, it was natural for me to believe Mr. *Dobbs* was concern'd in them, as I then thought, for Reasons already given in the said Page, that Mr. *Smith* was his Agent. He denies here that any Goods were shipped on his Account; I therefore cannot but believe him, as I sincerely am of Opinion all the World will who read his Remarks, that he would not have been ashamed

if

if the Goods had been his. Mr. *Dobbs* rates them at the Value of 35 *l.* but he takes care to let us know that this Estimation was by Hearsay. Now Mr. *Guy*, who was Messmate with *James Smith* in the Voyage, has made Oath †, that the said *James Smith* told him several times the said Goods cost above 100 *l.* Sterling. Since the said *Smith* came on shore, he lay and boarded at the *Union* Coffee-house in *Cornbill*; and then and there often told Mrs. *Hill*, a Person of Credit who lives in the same House, that the above-mentioned Goods cost upwards of 100 *l.*

Mr. *Dobbs* says, in the same Paragraph, that these Goods were put on board with my Privity and Approbation; that I gave a List of what Goods were proper to be sent, and promised, that, in case *James Smith* should die, I would sell them upon his Account. When I have set in a fair Light the clandestine Manner by which Mr. *Dobbs* got from me the Knowledge of what Goods were proper for the *Hudson's Bay* Trade, and that it is compared with his above Assertions, the World may be inclin'd to believe Mr. *Dobbs* would not have been asham'd of breaking in upon the Company's Charter, or indeed of any thing else which would any way be of use to him. The plain Matter of Fact is this: When I was fitting out for the late Voyage in search of a Passage, Mr. *Dobbs* desired I would give him a List of all the different Sorts of Goods proper to trade with in *Hudson's Bay*. I imagin'd this was only to satisfy his Curiosity; I had not the least Notion that he design'd, either by himself or his Friend Mr. *Smith* (since he will not allow him to have been his *Agent*) to enter upon a clandestine Trade; therefore, to comply with his Request, I readily lent him two Books, one with relation to the Trade, and the other (as I look'd upon him a curious Man) an Account of particular

† *Vide* *Guy's* Affidavit, in the Appendix.

Transactions; desiring him at the same time, to suffer no one to have the Inspection of them: But 'tis visible he had then Views quite different from what I imagin'd. It was from the first of these Books, by Mr. *Dobbs* deceiving the Confidence I had reposed in him, that Mr. *Smith* was enabled to make a List of, and to purchase Goods proper for, the Trade (for Mr. *Smith* returned me these Books, when he accompanied Mr. *Dobbs* in a Visit he made me); and Mr. *Dobbs* has since published, in his Quarto Romance, an Abstract of these very Books, which I entrusted to him under the Seal of Secrecy, and with a Dependence on his Honour. Now would any Man, whose Anger had not entirely deprived him of Reason, and all Sense of Conscience and Honour, tax me with having given him a List, out of which he had thus *trick'd* me? I am sorry I can use no gentler and equally expressive Term.

Mr. *Smith* talk'd to me once of giving his Brother a Trifle, to the Value of 30 or 40 s. to purchase some small Curiosities in the Country; but I return'd him no Answer. Allowing, however, I had consented to it, this was not a Cargo to hurt the Company; neither is it a Proof that upwards of 100 *l.* worth of Goods were shipped with my Consent, Privity, or Approbation: These three synonymous Words are, as I suppose, link'd together to give a greater Weight to the Charge, and a more agreeable Flow to his Period. But this is so far contrary to the Truth, that I never knew what was shipp'd on board the *Discovery* Pink, till the Master, Mr. *Moor*, acquainted me at the *Orkneys*. Mr. *Smith*, when he came to take his Leave of me at my House in *Ratcliff*, I acknowledge, put an unsealed Letter into my Hand the Instant I was going away, which I afterwards found was an Account of his having shipp'd two small Bales of Goods. But he was then so conscious that I would not have consented to the receiving them on board

bo
the
oth
say
con
wr
Pa
my
pla
boa
Bal
tice
Wi
the
to
thin
a C
ing
any
enti
was
own
and
add
thin
whi
to t
Wi
upo
here
grap
in t
M
Pag
fairl
dou
Tre
secu

board one of his Majesty's Ships, that in giving me the Letter he desired I would throw it among my other Papers, that were in a Pillow-case at hand, saying it was from himself, and insinuating that it contained little more than Directions how I might write to him. I accordingly threw it in among other Papers, and never thought more of it, till I sorted my Papers at the *Orkneys*, where Mr. *Moor* complain'd to me of the Quantity of Goods shipped on board him belonging to Mr. *Smith*, which were two Bales and two Chests: The latter by the bye no Notice is taken of in the above-mentioned Letter. Mr. *Wigate* and Mr. *Gill* were present; the former read the Letter, and I address'd myself to him in Words to this Purpose; I am surpriz'd Mr. *Smith* should think me weak enough to allow his sending out such a Quantity of Goods, when I, who have Money lying out at 3 per Cent. would carry none myself. If any Advantage was to be made, I thought myself entitled to make it preferably to any other, since I was answerable as much for their Conduct as for my own. I then ordered Mr. *Moor* to take care of them, and let them be put in a safe Place out of the way, adding, surely Mr. *Smith* does not know that such things are not allowed in the King's Service: To which Mr. *Wigate* replied, it was very true, or Words to that Effect. For the Truth of this I appeal to Mr. *Wigate*, Mr. *Moor*, Mr. *Gill*; and, if I am call'd upon, am ready and willing to attest all the Facts here advanced, in answer to the calumniating Paragraph before me, Page 58 of Mr. *Dobbs's* Remarks, in the most solemn and authentick Manner.

Mr. *Dobbs*, in his next Paragraph of the same Page, concludes, from a very false (as I hope I have fairly evinc'd) Assertion, that I design'd to play a double Game. This is a direct Parallel with the Treatment of the Christians in the Time of their Persecution under the *Roman* Tyrants, first sewing them

up in Bears Skins, and then baiting them. But I refer my Readers to the Company's Letters † for such an Order; which will not only be a full Answer to his Charge of Corruption, Concealments, insinuated Bribery, and Combination, but must throw Mr. *Dobbs* into the utmost Confusion, when his Passion subsides, and he recovers the right Use of his Reason. He builds much upon the Order, (which he unfairly says was gotten by my Application to the Admiralty) to protect the Company's Trade, and which, from the Reference I have made, will prove a groundless and malicious Accusation. But let us suppose that I never had any such particular Order, yet was it included in the general and printed Instructions given to every Commission Officer in his Majesty's Service, viz. "That Flagg Officers, and
 " Commanders of his Majesty's Ships, are to be
 " careful to maintain his Majesty's Honour upon all
 " Occasions; giving Protection to his Subjects, and
 " endeavouring, what in them lies, to secure and
 " encourage them in their lawful Commerce; and
 " they are not to injure in any manner the Subjects
 " of his Majesty's Friends and Allies." Hence it is evident, that I had no manner of Occasion to apply for a particular Order in favour of the Company, which proves not more extensive than this general one given to all Commanders; consequently this Phantom, which Mr. *Dobbs* has conjured up, of a Combination, &c. vanishes. He says, the Day after this Order (which he will have of my procuring) the Company gave me a new Letter to the *Moor* Factory. This is a false Assertion; it is indeed charging me at random; it is being regardless of his own Reputation; which I can attribute to nothing but the Strength of his Resentment, upon a cruel and gauling Disappointment, and to his anxious Struggles

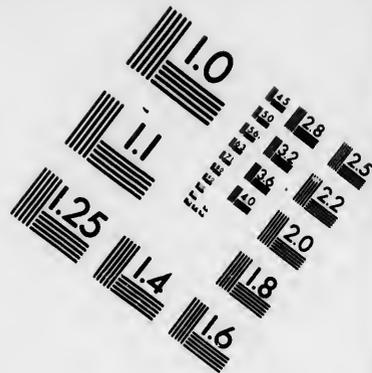
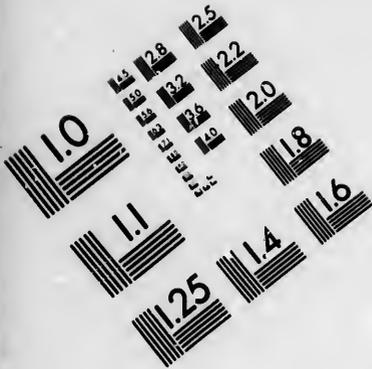
† *Vide* the Company's Letters.

to disculp himself, by endeavouring to load me with the Infamy of a Breach of Trust ; for he had Opportunities enough of being better informed than, I am afraid, he desired to be. Had he enquired at the Admiralty, he would there have learned that the Company, so far from giving me a Letter the next Day to the *Moose* Factory, as he boldly asserts, that they never gave me any Letter at all, the first excepted, which Mr *Dobbs* has taken care to print in his Remarks, and is such a one as I objected to, such a one as I would not accept, as indeed it was of no use but in the most imminent Danger, of which their Servants abroad were to be the Judges. At the Admiralty he would have farther learned, that not only the Letter he mentions in my Appendix, but Letters to all the Factories of the same Tenor and Date, were directed (not given to me) to the Lords of the Admiralty, by the Interposition of the Lords of the Regency ; and still farther, that I received these Letters, together with my Instructions and other Papers from their Lordships at the *Galleon's Reach*, consequently could not communicate them to Mr. *Dobbs*, had there been a Necessity for the two following Reasons : That Gentleman went for *Ireland* the very Day after the Date of that Packet of Letters, Instructions, &c. from the Admiralty, viz the 29th of *May* * 1741 ; and had he been in *London*, as I was a Stranger to the Contents of those Letters and Orders till I had received them, it was not in my Power.

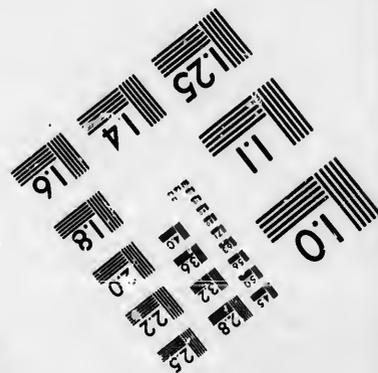
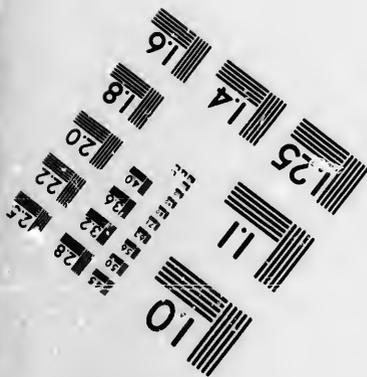
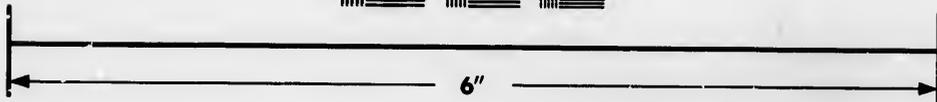
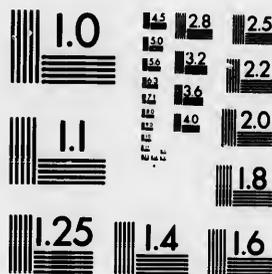
That worthy Gentleman says, Page 59, I had probably warmer Letters to *Churchill* Factory, which I thought proper to conceal, &c. Now the first Part of this is a Surmize which betrays both Malice and Ignorance. My Letter to the *Moose* Factory was as necessary as those to *Churchill*, *York Fort*, and *Albaney*

* *Vide* Page 52 of Mr. *Dobbs's* Remarks.





**IMAGE EVALUATION
TEST TARGET (MT-3)**



**Photographic
Sciences
Corporation**

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503



for the Preservation of his Majesty's Ships and the Lives of his Subjects, for the more Northerly Rivers might have been locked up by Ice ; and in such Case, in Consequence of this Letter, I had a Resource at *Moose* Factory, where the Winter commences three Weeks later. The other Part is an unfair ungentlemanlike Suggestion.

Page 60, he gives an Account of a private Conversation, in which, in justifying my Conduct, I let drop this Remarkable Expression, *That I had only one thing which I could blame myself for doing, which was, corresponding with Mr. Dobbs when I was in the Company's Service.* I think for his own Sake, Mr. Dobbs, had I said this, should have concealed it, since his having given the World such good Grounds, by exposing and endeavouring to give a sinister Turn to all that I ever said or wrote to him, is a sufficient Reason for my repenting that I ever believed him a Man of Honour : But I absolutely deny that ever I said any thing like it. As to his private Thought in the Remainder of that Paragraph, it is below all Notice.

His next Paragraph is only to swell his Book, nothing at all to the Purpose. All that I can gather from it is this, It speaks his Disappointment of having nothing but the Name of a *cold Cape*, instead of an advantageous Return from the Goods shipped on Board the *Discovery*, which he now denies having been any ways concerned in. What Return could he expect from me, but for the sake of paltry nine Guineas, that I should connive at the clandestine Trade designed to be carried on under the Name of *Smith* ? Mr. Dobbs, in his Passion, has got into such an historical Vein, that he seems every where to have shaken Hands with the Truth, and to have monopolized the Privilege of Travellers. These nine Guineas, which I offered to repay him, were but four and a Half, six for the Attorney-General's Fee, and

and three for the Copy of the Charter, as he himself told me ; and half of this, as by Agreement, I tendered him, and am still ready to pay him or his Order upon Demand. Now the Reason of such Agreement is this ; He propos'd our going Partners in the Furr Trade, and to fit out a Ship to that End, but I refus'd having any thing to do with it without Counsel's Advice. Mr. *Dobbs* brought me a Copy of the Charter which Mr. *Smith* wrote out, and the Attorney-General's Opinion upon it, at the time he returned me the two Books beforementioned, of which he had industriously made an Abstract, and since, like a Man of great Probity, Mr. *Dobbs* has published. See Page 197 of his Quarto Romance, where he says, the Account it contains, was taken out of Captain *Middleton's* Book. I am apt to believe his Anger to me was a little qualified by the Pleasure he took in writing that *Linsley-Wolfey* Collection of Truths and Falshoods, or he would probably have said as he has in his Remark, that I gave him that Account.

His last Paragraph, Page 60, is built upon a Supposition of his own, that I might myself minute down what I thought proper for my Scheme. Is it fair in Mr. *Dobbs* to endeavour to ruin a Man's Character by suggesting his own Surmizes, upon what he calls Probabilities ; upon groundless Suppositions, Inferences drawn from them ; upon false Facts advanced, Arguments and Conclusions on such Falsties, Chicaning, concealing of known Truths, and mean Subterfuges, contrary to all Councils, Reports, Journals, and Affidavits of Men who were in the Voyage ? I may venture to say I have, and I hope farther shall evince, that his Accusations have no other Foundations, except the Evidences of three Witnesses, two of which are entirely Ignorant of Sea Affairs, and the third has throughout contradicted what he has signed and given into the Admiralty,

and again by his new Reports contradicts his former.

In Page 61, tho' he is convinced by the Answer of his Friend the Lieutenant to Query 20 of the Flagrancy of his unjust Charge with relation to my Threats of breaking open Boxes, and taking away Books and Papers of such as kept Journals, yet he endeavours to get off from the Reproach due to so unfair and so ungentlemanlike a Procedure (and at the same time to fasten some of the Dirt he so plentifully flings upon me.) By this poor Evasion no body pretends I durst hinder the Lieutenant and Master from keeping Journals; but it was the Surgeon and Clerk whom I suspected of keeping Journals, and making Observations ridiculous to the last Degree. To this I shall borrow an Answer from an ancient Mythologist: A Wolf and a Lamb happened to drink at one and the same River, the former determining to devour the latter, but willing to have some Pretence for his Cruelty and Injustice, in a threatenng Tone accused the Lamb of muddying the Water; the meek Animal reply'd, "Consider Mr. Wolf, this is impossible, as the Stream descends "from you to me." Convinced by this Evidence, he dropt that Accusation, and to pick a Quarrel, taxed the trembling Creature with having curled and treated him with opprobrious Language three Months before that Time: The Lamb replied, I have not been so long yeand; however said the Wolf, if it was not you, it was some of your Relations that curled me; and on this unjust Charge fell upon and devour'd the Lamb.

In the same Page Mr. *Dobbs* says, none taxes the Captain about his not instructing or improving his Men in the navigating Part; his Capacity is not in Question, it is his Integrity is Doubted, from his being blinded by the Company. It is true, and I believe Mr. *Dobbs* had been very well pleased if I had

had not brought this Proof of my Integrity ; for if I designed to conceal the Discovery which he has laboured hard, tho' vainly, to prove, I must have been a very great Idiot to have endeavoured, at the same time, to instruct my People how to detect me. To this repeated Charge of the Company, I have already said enough. In the same Paragraph he says, the Evidence of the Master is of no Weight, and why ? because Mr. *Dobbs* is pleased roundly to assert, that the said Master's Answer was all Evasion, and rather my Defence written down by me and signed by him, quite different from what he own'd upon Examination before the Admiralty. Is not this a very convincing Proof, and sufficient to make the Master lose all future Credit ? If Mr. *Dobbs* expects that what he averrs, the World will receive with an implicit Faith, why has he given himself the Trouble of endeavouring to convince them by Evidence ? he need only have asserted that I am guilty of the Roguery and corrupted by the Company, have concealed the Passage, which I had actually discovered. If he does not expect such Deference to be paid to his bare Assertions, to what End does he so boldly and so often advance them ? But, a bold Assertion may with credulous, honest Men, who would not themselves be guilty of a Falsity, meet with Credit ; however *valeat Quantum valere Potest* : 'Tis of Consequence to a bad Cause to throw a great deal of Dirt ; some may possibly stick. His next Paragraph which he carries over to Page 62, has been already answered. He asks why I would sign a Blunder ; I answer, That it being slack Tide, and the Flood just coming on for the Boat to go up the River, which could not get out but at slack Tide on account of the Ice enclosing the Ship all round (where we lay in the Cove of *Savage Sound*) the Hurry occasioned my overlooking the Error, when I signed the Order, and would not allow Time for writing ano-

ther without I had resolv'd to lose twelve Hours, which I hope he will own was not for the Service I was sent upon.

Mr. *Dobbs* tells us, that notwithstanding the Ebb made out Easterly, &c. yet in a Strait, a Western Tide might have met them farther West ; here is one of that Gentleman's Probabilites, and is just as probable as our meeting a Flood from the *Atlantic* Ocean at *Putney* Bridge. We try'd above thirty Leagues up *Wager* River, and found about half way from the Entrance the Water at most but brackish ; our People drank * and made Broth of it with their Deer's Flesh. The Papers in the Margin referred to, answer this Paragraph, and prove the Strait a fresh Water River. However, this next, by an additional Account from the Lieutenant, has gain'd Mr. *Dobbs* a compleat Victory, by putting it out of all Dispute that the *Wager* is undeniably a Strait, &c. when the Queries were drawn up. We may suppose by this subsequent Information, that neither the Lieutenant, nor even Mr. *Dobbs* himself, knew what Answer, to several of them, were of Use to his Design, and therefore his Respondents often make them in a very laconic and general manner ; but the time they have since had, together with the Assistance of my *Chart* and *Reply*, have enabled them to put it out of all Dispute that they are extremely ignorant. In the first Place Mr. *Dobbs* says, *I must have been told that it was a Flood from the W. S. W.* In the additional Account the Lieutenant says, that he was convinced that the Tide which stopt the Boat, and brought her to a Grapnel, was a strong Flood-Tide from the *W. N. W.* How then, and by whom must I have been told that the Flood was from the *W. S. W.* Secondly, in his first Report, as also in the Master's, there is no Mention of any Strait or Flood-Tide, tho' Notice

* See *Guy's* Affidavit, and *Price's* Report.

is taken of a Water Fall ; but in this supplemental Account, we have the Discovery of a large and spacious Strait leading away to the Southward of the West or W. S. W. or more Southerly by Compass. He is indeterminate in the Account of the Course of this Strait, it cannot be through Forgetfulness, because he says expressly he set it by Compass ; it is therefore to serve some End, which visibly is to bring his imaginary Passage to the Southward of the West, instead of the Probability of an Opening to the East, as is mentioned in the said joint Report. When Mr. *Dobbs* would have moved the Lieutenant's *Bluff Point* from the East to the West Side of *Wager River*, he took care to allow for the Variation, tho' the Lieutenant says expressly by Compass. Now that he would have a large and spacious Strait transported more Southerly, his Observation is by Compass. But is not here a palpable Alteration for Mr. *Dobbs's* Purpose ; and does not this different way of observing with Variation or Compass, appear a low mean Collusion ?

The Reasons given in this new Account by which the Lieutenant was convinced, that there was a strong Flood Tide from W. N. W. a judicious Man will say are no Reasons at all ; for granting he altered the Land very much until he met the Fresh or Water fall against him, that the Boat then fell a Stern by coming nearer to the Cataract, and that it flowed six Foot, as the Lieutenant says ; these are no more than what may be observed in all Rivers. When you come to the End of the Flood-Stream, the Water swells several Foot, tho' the fresh Stream runs strong against you ; this may be seen every Tide of Flood at *London Bridge*, and continues for near $\frac{1}{4}$ Tide, till the Flood meets the ebbing Stream, and they come to an horizontal Plane. It is visible the sudden turning of the Tide or Fresh against him, can be ascribed to nothing but his getting nearer to the Cataract, where

it might run against him twice as fast as the Boat went a-head, tho' they had a good Breeze of Wind. The Mountain was in Labour, and has brought forth a ridiculous Mouse. Can any one read the exulting manner in which Mr. *Dobbs* ushers into the World this Destructive Report, which was to metamorphose *Wager* River, making it a Strait, and not except Conviction from every Line, if not every Word! And can it be read without Astonishment, that a Man of Sense, could build upon such poor Stuff, and hope it would go down with the Public? But he was upon the Subject of the Discovery, and that was incompatible with cool Reflection. It would be affronting the Understanding of my Readers, to point out by any Comment the Contradictions contained in these Reports, and Mr. *Dobbs*'s introductory Reflexions upon the latter, in which there are no less than four Points of the Compass difference, his delusive manner of introducing or throwing out the Variation, as it may serve his Purpose, is obvious even to the meanest Capacity. What I have already said in answer, is really doing this Paragraph, and the Lieutenant's Report, too much Honour. I refer my Reader to Mr. *Guy*'s † Affidavit, whom Mr. *Dobbs* allows a Witness of Consequence.

What he says in the next Paragraph, Page 63, with regard to the Saltness of the Water, has been already refuted; I shall only observe three Things, *First*, That we have only Mr. *Dobbs*'s Word for it, that the Master's Answer with regard to this Particular, being quite contrary to what he own'd to him, and very different to what he said before the Admiralty, viz. That it was brackish at the farthest Place they were at. *Secondly*, that Mr. *Dobbs*, Page 64, tells us, that the Lieutenant expressly said it was salt, tho' his Words are, *The Water, I think, was salt, but as I*

† *Vide* Appendix, Answer to Quiry the first.

would not intirely depend on my own Judgment, I fill'd three Bottles at three different Places, and brought them on Board at my Return, and was told there that there was no Distinction, for they were all equally alike salt. Now by the bye there were but two Bottles. How does Mr. *Dobbs* play off this poor weak Man? what a Tool does he make him? In his Answer to Query 20th, he is diffident whether I discouraged him in making Discoveries or not; Indeed he could not say I did, but some of the Officers were of a different Opinion; and here the poor Man will not trust to his own Taste whether the Water was salt or not, he relies on the Opinion of others who told him they were all equally salt; the Consequence of which is, they were also all equally fresh; so that this express Assertion of the Lieutenant determines nothing. I think that his not being able to distinguish whether it was salt or not, is a convincing Proof that it was quite fresh or very little brackish, and shews his whole Answer an Equivocation, if he has not quite lost his Palate. *Thirdly*, That Mr. *Dobbs* thinks I ought to have got the Master to have sworn, *when he was swearing*, to this material Point of the Freshness of the Water, where he is quite silent. But are Affidavits of any Weight with him? Will he allow them in Competition with his own bare Assertion, and does he not plainly shew by the Sneer in these Words, *When the Master was swearing*, that had he done it, he should have esteemed his Oath of no Weight? I thought his Affirmation, as he is a Man of an honest Character, sufficient in his Answer to the Admiralty. He says, *The Water above Deer Sound was fresher, and the higher up the fresher still*. This is one Reason, and a sufficient one with an honest Man, for my not requiring his Affidavit. But a second is, there are other Affidavits * and Reports to

* *Vide* *Guy's* Affidavit in the Appendix, and *Price's* Report.

corroborate

corroborate what he said, one of which, who is not so diffident of his Palate as the Lieutenant, swears positively by his Taste. No, replies Mr. *Dobbs*, these are not the Reasons: *He durst not swear flagrantly against his former Declarations, lest it would* (I suppose, he means should) *invalidate what Capt. Middleton got him to swear against the Surgeon and Clerk* which, by the bye, Mr. *Dobbs*, tho' he seems to have forgotten, he in a great measure acknowledges to be true, Page 77 of his Remarks.

In the next Paragraph, Page 64, he defends the Bull I tax him with. I acknowledge it was trifling in me to take notice of it, but however, it has had this Effect, that it has shewn how able a Man Mr. *Dobbs* is at Evasion. Notwithstanding this *Hibernicism* remains as strong as ever, for he could have no Notion of Openings, had there been no Openings discovered.

Part of his next Paragraph, Page 64 and 65, is not worth Notice, and the rest is answered, as are the two following.

In his last Paragraph, Page 65 and 66, he tells the Public that I say, to use his own Words, "What *Norton* saw, which he would now transfer to his Carpenter, was either *Wager* River or an Inland Lake, which he, *Norton*, saw Southward of the West from *Whalebone Point*. How inconsistent or inconsiderate is this Answer? *Whalebone Point* is in $64^{\circ} 55'$, and the Entrance of *Wager* River in $65^{\circ} 24'$, and from thence it runs up N. W. How then could he *Norton* see it Southward of the West." In the first place, I do not transfer to *Norton's* Carpenter what *Norton* saw; I say, if I rightly remember, &c. this shews I spoke in doubt; and in the next Place it was easy for him, *Norton*, or his Carpenter, to see a large River or an inland Lake, as they travelled 15 Miles in Land after some
Deer,

Deer, and it is not above 30 Miles over from *Whalebone Bay* to *Wager River*, they having got half Way ; and being upon very high Land, though they had not as good Eyes as my Lieutenant, who could discover Openings clear of Ice at 10 or 12 Leagues Distance. If they are mistaken in the Bearings four or five Points without a Compass, it is more excusable in them, who were Land-Men, than in the Lieutenant who is mistaken seven Points and $\frac{1}{2}$ in taking the Bearings of a Bluff Point with a Compass ; but this and my *Indian's Land Voyage*, Mr. *Dobbs* will have Inventions of my own. What Purpose would such Inventions serve ? if it was to any, I should have taken more Care than to have left that Gentleman room to cavel with my Fiction.

His Repetitions in the next Paragraph are already answered, and in the following he accuses me with regard to my keeping the Ships in *Savage Cove* ; for continues he, there is a finer Harbour near *Deer Sound* free from Ice, and from thence he could have gone Westward without Ice ; I reply, Mr. *Dobbs* ought to be a Judge of what he speaks to, before he passes Sentence ; I say, and so will every Mariner, that my Answer is full and to the Purpose ; and what I have advanced, confirmed by all Journals. I admit that the Harbour near *Deer Sound* was all free from Ice, but the Passage to it so lock'd up from Side to Side, that it was with great Difficulty the Boats were got up and down ; how then would this Gentleman have me carry up two Ships ? But farther, could we have hauled the Ships over the Ice as we did our Boats, should not I have gone contrary to my Instructions, and given Mr. *Dobbs* a Handle to accuse me, by seeking a Passage in a Fresh-Water River, and against an Ebb Tide ?

Page 67, Mr. *Dobbs* taxes me without the least Hesitation, with having penn'd the Master's Answer to the Charge brought against me for not letting the Lieutenant take away a Man who perfectly understood the Northern *Indian* Language; I say 'tis false, tho' possibly the Dictating to his Witnesses whatever may make for his unjustifiable Purposes, may, and indeed seems to have been his Practice; and I think some of the laconic Answers to the Queries, and the Alterations of the Lieutenant's Report, in a manner demonstrate it. His Cause may want an artful Support, but mine, which is that of the Truth, stand in need of none. The Person whom the Lieutenant would have taken away (tho' I do not know by what Authority) was *John Butler*; and I am glad Mr. *Dobbs* allows that he perfectly understands the Northern *Indian* Language, as his Evidence will prove that Gentleman's having imposed on the Public by printing a Vocabulary of that Language. At the End of his Quarto Romance, he says the *Indian* that I took was but a very bad Interpreter, but however, I had a Surgeon who wrote the *Indian* Dictionary, just now mentioned, to assist this Interpreter, which Mr. *Dobbs* ought to have considered. He asks me why I required Leave to take this Man along with me? I answer, because I would not depart from the Admiralty Orders. What he calls my Subserviency to the Governor in saluting the Forts, &c. was in Obediencè to my printed Instructions, Page 85, under the Articles of Salutes; but notwithstanding, for Fear I might mistake and do wrong, I consulted my Officers on Board, and sent the Lieutenant ashore with a Letter to the Governour before we went in: Thus if I have erred, it was not without the Advice of People bred up in the Navy. There is nothing more in this Paragraph worthy of the least Notice.

Mr.

gra
wic
for
the
tho
Jud
whi
as
dica
N
in t
T
den
as to
mar
ed o
of r
that
must
attest
rancel
and
to in
Dobb
Opin
of oth
In
Dobb
" Di
" Pl
" sal
" lai

||
Govern
Letter,
Declar

Mr. *Dobbs* taxes me, Page 69 in his third Paragraph, with denying Part of Query 17th, and with not answering the latter Part of it; as to the former, the Master as well as I, and even his Friend the Lieutenant in his Journal, *July* the 5th, deny it, tho' the Clerk, who must be allowed of superior Judgment, *apprehends* the contrary. That Part which I did not answer, is not worth the least Reply, as 'tis quite groundless, and so proved in my Vindication ||.

Mr. *Dobbs* will find a full Answer to his 18th Query in the Papers quoted in the Margin.

That Gentleman admits or rejects Hearsay-Evidence, as it makes for or against his Purpose, but as to what *Towns*, *Grant*, and *Cooper* have sworn, the marginal References prove they were rightly informed of the Facts, and that his two Witnesses are Men of remarkable *Gratitude* and *Probity*. The rest of that Paragraph is a malicious Fiction, as every one must be convinced, and the Ship's Company can attest (as well as Mr. *Buttler*) the Surgeon's Ignorance of the Language; but they are not *Wilson's* and *Mackbeth's* Affidavits alone on which I depend to invalidate the Answers of his Witnesses. Mr. *Dobbs* will find many Proofs of their being, in the Opinion of even two of his own Friends, as well as of others, but of very doubtful Credit.

In his long Paragraph, Page 70, 71, 72, 73, Mr. *Dobbs* says, " But if it be *plain* that he *neglected* the " *Discovery*, when *pointed out* to him in *several* " *Places*, that he has made *false Charts*; *lain down* " *false Currents* and *Tides*, and that he has formally " *lain down a large frozen Strait* for *his Tide* to flow

|| *Vide* Page 86 and 96 of my Vindication; the Beginning of Governor *Ipsam's* Letter, *August* the 6th, 1743; Mr. *Searle's* Letter, *March* 30, 1744; the Affidavit of *Richard Guy* and the Declaration of Mr. *Dewilde*.

“ in at, and *his Whales* to come through, which
 “ was but *three Leagues Wide, full of Islands, and*
 “ *fast frozen from Side to Side, &c.* then the *Snake*
 “ *in the Grass* is retorted back upon him, and the
 “ *Sting and Odium* will lye at his Door ; and it will
 “ be easily believed that he did not do this for *no-*
 “ *thing, &c.*” I agree with this Gentleman in his Con-
 clusion, but has he proved any of these Points of
 wilful Neglect, Imposition on the Public, Cruelty,
 Fiction, or Corruption ; and has he not taken every
 Method possible to make good his Charge ?

As to my wilfull Neglect of the Discovery, when
 pointed out to me in several Places, I have already
 incontestably proved it a groundless Story. As to
 my Imposition on the Public by false Charts, laying
 down false Currents and Tides, I need make no An-
 swer, since Mr. *Dobbs* himself has cleared me from
 this Aspersions in his Quarto Romance, Page 70,
 before quoted, ——— But upon what Evidence
 does he bring this Charge ? why truly, upon an ano-
 nymous Letter which gave him the first Hint of my
Roguery, which since proves to have been written by
 the Surgeon and Clerk ; and how good Judges are
 they likely to be of Charts, Currents, and Tides, I
 leave to the Public. As to my Fiction of the frozen
 Strait, and the Depth, I answer, that to the Confu-
 sion of his Witnesses, such Strait, I shall prove, is no
 Fiction. The Depth of Water is at the Entrance
 of the frozen Strait 105 Fathoms by Soundings, as
 may be seen by every Logg † and Journal kept on
 board the *Furnace*. He cannot suppose we failed
 into these frozen Straits to ascertain the Depths within
 it, which I have said in my Vindication is probably
 the same. I cannot but here take notice of this

† *Vide* my Vindication, Page 124.

Gentleman's Disingenuity ; he begins the Logg he has printed on *Sunday* the eighth, whereas had he begun it on *Saturday* the seventh, he would have found the Soundings at 12 at Night set down 105 Fathoms ; but this he wilfully omitted, as it would have deprived him of an Instance to prove one of his Heads of Accusation. As to the Charge of Cruelty, with regard to the *Indians*, it is answered by *Guy's* Affidavit : And farther, in this Appendix Governor *Isham's* Letter proves it both groundless and malicious. The Fiction he accuses me with, is, I suppose, of the frozen Straits, to which I have already spoken ; and for his Corruption, the Charge is so often repeated and answered, that it would tire the Reader to say any thing of it here. His Attack upon the Company, Page 72, I leave to them for an Answer, if they think it worth their Notice.

With regard to my playing double (to support which Charge, he refers to my own Letters) I shall ingenuously own, that my Correspondence with Mr. *Dobbs* having given the Company Jealousy, their treating me for that Reason in a manner I did not think I merited, caused some Resentment on my Side, and I listened more than ever to Mr. *Dobbs's* Sollicitations ; which I may say extorted from me the Letter N^o 11. in his Appendix, Page 102, 103, and by quoting which, he has unhappily and very strongly proved, what he has as strenuously denied, *viz.* his having sollicitated and sought after my Acquaintance ; and farther, that no Man ought to repose the least Confidence in him, since he had rather forfeit the Character of a Man of Honour, as here, and that of Probity, as throughout his Remarks, he has ; than not indulge to his Passion.

It

It is a Trouble to me ; I am really griev'd that he compels me to treat him with Asperity ; my Reputation, and my Childrens Bread, are to be defended against the Attacks of disappointed, and, as 'tis visible, malevolent Men. Had I less Stakes upon the Board, I should be unmov'd, and, allowing for the Frailties of human Nature, have made no Reply, as I should have expected Mr. *Dobbs*, of whose Probity I had a great Opinion, would, in time, have been convinced, from the general Character of his Informers, that he had wrong'd me in his Opinion, and, consequently, would have done me publick Justice. Could he have coolly mentioned this Affair of the Discovery, he would have written with more Caution ; he would have consider'd the Consequence of striking at a Man's Reputation, not only with regard to the Person who unhappily is the Object of his Displeasure, but with respect to himself, as it might possibly hurt his own Character, both as a Christian and a Gentleman. But to return ; To prevent my Reader the Trouble of having Recourse to the Remarks, I shall give him the Contents of the Letter referred to by Mr. *Dobbs*, in a summary Way : “ I observ'd to him, tho' his
 “ Application in behalf of the Discovery had at that
 “ time proved fruitless, yet, as he intended to push
 “ the Attempt next Season, I hoped he might find
 “ Things more favourable. I returned him Thanks
 “ for his Assurances and Friendship in recommend-
 “ ing me for the Undertaking, and promised, ac-
 “ cording to his Request, to make farther Enquiries
 “ and Observations in the Voyage I was going upon.
 “ I take notice of Sir *Charles Wager's* being indiffer-
 “ ent, and having but little Inclination to the Enter-
 “ prize, tho' he allow'd the Probability of a Pas-
 “ sage ; however, that he would be no Obstacle, if
 “ the Government thought fit to enter into it at the
 “ Publick's Expence. I then told him, that what
 “ he

“ he propos'd of a Premium for the Discovery, upon
 “ the Conditions in the said Letter mention'd I
 “ thought very reasonable, and as one of them was
 “ a free Trade, I spoke my Doubt, whether the
 “ Company's Privilege was by Act of Parliament,
 “ or by a Grant only from the Crown, and if by
 “ the Letter, I gave my Opinion that it would be
 “ easy to find three or four Persons who would be
 “ at the Charge of fitting out Sloops for the Dis-
 “ covery, having the Liberty granted them of
 “ trading in the Bay, I after this tell him for Rea-
 “ sons in the said Letter contain'd, that I should be
 “ glad to know whether or not the Company have
 “ an Act to confirm the Charter,” now I leave it
 to any impartial Reader, if this be not a full and
 convicting Proof of Mr. *Dobbs's* Earnestness to pro-
 secute the Discovery, and if so, whether it is not a
 natural Consequence that he sought out, and solicited
 me, to engage in the Undertaking; whether I had
 not the Interest of my Country at Heart when I pro-
 pos'd to find Men who should take off from the
 Public the Expence of such an Attempt; whether I
 acted imprudently or unjustly, when I thought my
 self ill used by the Company to come into Proposals
 more to my Advantage than was their Service, and
 whether Mr. *Dobbs* in publishing my Letters and
 endeavouring my Ruin for placing a Confidence in
 his Probity, has acted like a Man of Honour, or
 even common Honesty?

As to his Repetition in Page 73. of his Remarks
 about my Art in printing a Letter, it is already an-
 swered, Page 95. and all that can be inferred from a
 Paragraph he says I omitted, for which I have al-
 ready given a Reason, is, that I resent'd ill Usage,
 and that Mr. *Dobbs*, is a very ungentlemanlike Anta-
 gonist, and has not so much a Design to lay open the
 Truth, as by every Mean to complete my Ruin,
 tho' he thereby sacrifices his own Reputation; how
 pernicious

pernicious is the Effect of Resentment! his Appeal Page 74. is a Flourish upon the Character of his Witnesses, and his Recapitulation I shall take but little Notice of, as to the first, the Judges to whom he has addressed himself are to determine, for I believe from the innate Justice of the *English* Nation they have hitherto, waiting my Reply, suspended their Judgment; as to the Latter, I am full of Opinion, till his Informers had been tamper'd with, they were unwilling to borrow Mr. *Dobbs's* own Expression to criminate their Captain, not from the Reason he gives, viz. *their great Regard for the Public*, but for another which was, as I have very good Ground to believe, the Care of their Interest, they would be satisfied what Price they were to be pay'd for the Hazard of their Reputation, and this appears probable from *Thomson's* Saying to Master *Wilson* †, that he thought he was in the Right not to give any Informations till he knew upon what Conditions he was to do it, now the *English* of this is, *Thomson* himself was promised 100*l.* and to be sent down to cure all the scorbutic Seamen at *Portsmouth*, having, as he vaunted, a *Nostrum*, but was balked in his Expectations. 'tis certain I have no Proof of this, and I don't expect that he will acknowledge I had it from his own Mouth, or that *Wigate* will own he ever told me the same Thing, tho' actual Truth; my however, bare Assertion I hope may stand upon as good a Foot with the Public as the many Mr. *Dobbs* has publish'd in his Remarks without any manner of Support, especially as the § Masters, Mr. *Dewilde's* and *Mackbetb's* Affidavit strongly prove Offers and Promises of Reward to such as could be, and had been, induced to accuse me ||. If *Wigate* boasts are true, Mr. *Dobbs*,

† *Vide Wilson's* Affidavit in my Vindication, Page 139.

§ *Vide My* Vindication, Page 138, 139, 140, and 147, 148.

|| *Vide Macbetb's* Affidavit in my Vindication, Page 141.

an illnated Man would say, is guilty of vile Corruption; if they are false, a good-natur'd Man will be apt to think that Gentleman is too light of Belief in crediting a Person who will romance, and rather for that Reason, pity his Weakness, than condemn his Resentment; but as Mr. *Dobbs*, Page 75. and the Sequel endeavours to palliate this Procedure of his, which he cannot deny, I may be allowed to say, it appears to me in a very disadvantageous Light, and can reflect no Credit on either Mr. *Dobbs* or his Witnesses.

Mr. *Dobbs* Page 75. says, that Master *Wilson* is the only Man who seems to push that Matter, I suppose meaning the Invalidation of Messieurs *Thompson* and *Wigate's* Evidence, and he the Master swears in very indeterminate and loose Words, as for Mr. *Duwilde's* Oath, Mr. *Dobbs* tells us it is nothing to the Purpose; does not *Mackbeth* also swear to the same Purpose? In his Affidavit he says positively that *Wigate* and *Thomson* have often, at that Deponent's House, and in his hearing boasted that they wou'd do Captain *Middleton's* Business and get him broke, nay farther, that they would take Care the said Capt. *Middleton* should never command another of the King's Ships; he positively swears he has heard *Wigate* say that he might be made a Purser of one of his Majesty's Ships whenever he pleased, he swears farther that *Wigate* shewed him many Letters affirming he had received them from one Mr. *Arthur Dobbs* of Ireland, in which Letters the said Mr. *Dobbs* had promised to reward the said *Wigate* to his Heart's Content, provided the said *Wigate* would draw up and sign something of the Nature of an Accusation against the said Captain *Middleton*. Mr. *Duwilde* swears, *Wigate* declared to him that Mr. *Dobbs* promised Preferment to Mr. *Thompson* and *Wigate*. As to the Masters, Oath; he

he swears positively, that *Thompson* threaten'd both himself and Capt. *Middleton* with Ruin. Is this loose and indeterminate? Does not this prove they were set to work by somebody, who had, or thought he had, the Power to make good these Menaces? Can two such low Creatures as *Thompson* and *Wigate* be presumed to make such Threats, if they did not think they should be well supported? As to what *Mackbeth* swears, does it not prove pre-pens'd Malice, which is sufficient to invalidate, in Courts of Justice, the Evidence of any Witnesses? Does not that Affidavit prove Mr. *Dobbs* either corresponded with *Wigate*, and endeavour'd to corrupt him, by Promises of Reward, or that the said *Wigate* is a notorious Liar? If the first is allow'd, it is sufficient to take off his Testimony; if the latter is admitted, can he deserve Credit in any thing else that he shall advance? Is Mr. *Dewilde's* Affidavit, who swears *Wigate* told him that Mr. *Dobbs* promised Preferment to his Witnesses, nothing to the purpose? Does it not corroborate what the Master and *Mackbeth* have sworn with regard to Corruption; and does not Mr. *Dobbs*, Page 78, endeavour to palliate what he cannot deny, as he does in this Paragraph, the Promise made the Master, of being employ'd in my Place. I shall pass over the Saltness of the fresh Water, which is already sufficiently answer'd*.

Page 76, 77, 78, 79, and Part of 80, Mr. *Dobbs* labours hard, and says a great deal to clear himself from the Imputation of Malice and Corruption, and to invalidate the Affidavits made in my Favour. The Concern visible in these Pages, and the Pains taken to the above Ends, I think evidently speak a Consciousness of Guilt, I shall leave them as they are to the Judgment of the Publick, which, I

* *Vide* *Guy's* Affidavit and *Price's* Report, in the Appendix.

am apt to believe, will hardly be influenced by his Assertions and weak Reasoning.

Mr. *Dobbs* tells us, Page 78, that the Affidavits of *Towns*, *Van Sobriek* and *Grant*, cannot be Evidence, and as to the salt Water, they all swear by Hearsay. What Reason that Gentleman has for saying they cannot be Evidence I know not, since he does not here impeach the Character of any of them by any Particulars. *Towns* swears to the unanimous Opinion of Capt. *Moor*, Mr. *Wilson*, Master of the *Furnace*, and the petty Officers that accompany'd them, after they had been up the River, that there could be no Passage out of the said River *Wager*, Northward or Westward. He farther swears, that he heard them deliver their Reasons for this Opinion; which were the Freshness of the Water increasing the higher they went, the Tide flowing but six Foot at the highest Place, which would not allow their going higher. He swears positively to three Whales, which he saw just without the Mouth of *Wager* River. Again he swears, he is certain, from his own Knowledge, that all the way from the *Frozen Straits*, so named by Capt. *Middleton*, when he discover'd it, to *Wager* River, that the Tide of Flood came from the Eastward; after which, he gives his Opinion, upon Oath, that Capt. *Middleton* had the *Discovery* at heart, above all Things, and gives substantial Reasons to support such his Opinion, in the following Words: "That he (*i. e.* Capt. *Middleton*) had the
 " *Discovery* at heart above all Things; for that
 " he seem'd overjoy'd at every thing that seem'd
 " to promise it, and kept a constant Look-out and
 " Examination of all Shores; keeping, sometimes,
 " eight and forty Hours upon Deck at a time,
 " which must be very fatiguing in those Parts to a
 " Man in his bad State of Health." *Van Sobriek* swears, that the Flood Tide, which flows up the River *Wager*, in at its Mouth, comes all from the

E. or the E. by N. the Course of the *New Strait* by Compass, and from the *Frozen Strait* round *Cape Frigid*, and that it did not come from the Southwestward. He farther swears, that all the Way between *Brook Cobham* and *Cape Dobbs*, that is between 63° and 65° of Latitude, they were sure of the Main Land, (that is, the two Ships Companies) and were never above three or four Leagues off the Main Land, except in one or two Places, where, meeting with Shoal Water, they lay to in the Night-time, that they might not pass over any Place unseen, and stood in Shore in the Day; that off the Head Land, in Latitude $63^{\circ}, 20'$. they were not two Leagues from the Shore. He again swears, that on board the *Discovery* from *Churchill* home, there were not above four or five in a Watch able to go aloft to hand or reef a Sail, including Officers, though that Ship was then better mann'd than the *Furnace*, insomuch, that in *Wager* River the *Discovery* *Pink* was obliged to send most of her Hands to assist on board the *Furnace*, where they had few besides sick Men. And, lastly, he makes Oath, that he saw two or three *Whales* of the *Whalebone* Kind, without the Mouth of the River *Wager*. *Grance Grant's* Affidavit corroborates what *Towns* has sworn of Mr. *Moor's*, Mr. *Wilson* and petty Officers declaring unanimously, that there was no Passage Westward out of *Wager* River, and alledges their Reasons, which are the same as in the Affidavit of *Towns*; he also swears to the seeing three or four black *Whales* blowing, as they (the Ships) were coming out of *Wager* River; he swears farther to my *Conduēt* and *Vigilance* in searching all Shores, and my lying by in the Night, that I might not pass any *Straits* or *Inlets* that might offer a Passage; he swears to the ill State of Health of the Men in both Ships, and gives it as his Belief, upon Oath, that the saving all their Lives was owing to my *Vigilance*

lance and Conduct, and that if I had died they should scarce ever have seen *England* again; he also swears to the *Indians* going off in a good tight Boat, (and it is here to be observed that he was one of the Carpenter's Crew) highly pleased with the Presents, &c. which I had given; and, lastly, he swears that he was employ'd by Capt. *Moor*, of the *Discovery*, in making one Copy, and finishing another, of the said *Moor's* Journals. Are these Facts sworn to, from their certain Knowledge, to be term'd Hearsay, and Points so material as flatly contradict the Evidence of Mr. *Dobbs's* Witnesses, to be compared to Straws which drowning Men catch at? Do they not flash Conviction, and ought they not to (I do not say will they not) cover my Persecutors with Shame and Confusion?

But, says Mr. *Dobbs*, Page 79, " *Towns* and " *Van Sobriek* also swear, that the Flood came from " the *Eastward* from the *Frozen Strait*; yet this " they must take from the *Faith* of the *Captain*, for " they were never ashore to know, and what he was " pleased to call *Flood*, that they believed it to be so." I find Mr. *Dobbs* had rather betray Ignorance than not throw Dirt; had he been as knowing in Sea Affairs, as he would be thought, he would not allege the Necessity of these Men going ashore to try the Tides and Currents, they were almost always in the Boat, getting the high and low Water Slacks; also the Strength of the Stream, with the Point of the Compass it sat. They had been ashore in the River *Wager* three Weeks, and several times came down towards its Mouth with me, to observe the Tides, and were as well acquainted with, as Mr. *Dobbs* is ignorant of, them. We came out of *Wager* River the 4th of *August*, and the Tide at Six that Evening was fallen one Foot, and on the 5th Day we were within Half a Mile of the low
H Beach,

Beach, † where every Man might observe the Tide on board, as well as on shore. Hence it is evident, that they need not have pin'd their Faith upon me, but were good Judges of what they advanced.

As to the Point of the Whales, it has been already answer'd, as is also what regards the *Indians*. On the Whole, says Mr. *Dobbs*, all my Affidavits and Evidence are insignificant, and the Facts, Logs and Journals are against me, and support the Charge of my Misconduct. This is a very bold Charge! But what Facts has he advanced, which have not been already refuted, except his Tides and Currents, which I shall speak to in the Sequel? What Logs and Journals has he produced, except an imperfect waste Book, which he calls a *Log*, to support this round Assertion of Misconduct? Why does he not produce the Journals of the Lieutenant, of the two Masters, and my own, to make good this Accusation, and to prove the Insignificancy of my Affidavits and Evidence? And why does he say, Page 74, 75, that he appeals to the large Original Log-Book belonging to the *Fur-nace*, in which he observed some few Things differ from the Pocket Log-Book that I printed. As the Lieutenant and Master of the *Discovery Pink* are gain'd over to his Interest, he has had Opportunity enough, no doubt, to have examined them. As for Mr. *Moor*, the Master of the *Discovery's* Log and Journal, he had taken them out of the Admiralty long enough before he printed his Remarks, consequently he was under no Necessity of appealing to a single waste Book. The Truth is, he examined them; but his Business was to blacken, not to clear my Reputation; and, therefore, would not refer to Journals and Log-Books, which invalidate

† *Vide* my Vindication, Page 141, 142, 143, 144, 145, 146, inclusive.

the
A
ma
any
at
p
bo
ma
und
tha
inde
nan
kno
his
surp
and
whic
ing
Lieu
M
again
Com
and
refute
ceed,
Page
W. S
but he
he say
the W
comes
Tide,
from
with
Dobbs'

the Evidence of his Witnesses, plainly prove his Assertions groundless, and his Accusations false and malicious; but, since Mr. *Dobbs* has not produced any of these. The Curious may inspect the Originals at the Admiralty and Navy-Office.

I beg leave here to take Notice, as it is not every body into whose Hands these Sheets may fall, that may have Patience to read what will be contain'd under the Heads of *Tides* and *Currents*, to observe that Mr. *Dobbs*, in his Sort of a Log-Book, but indeed the waste Book, has destroy'd the Lieutenant's Flood-Tide from the *Western Ocean*, by acknowledging, in the last Line but one, Page 132 of his *Remarks*, that it came from the East. I am surpriz'd he, who is so great a Judge of Log-Books and Journals, &c. should be guilty of a Blunder, which, at once, oversets all his S. W. Tides coming from the *Western American Ocean*, through the Lieutenant's imaginary Opening.

Mr. *Dobbs*, Page 80, fums up all his Evidence against, and then gives his Opinion of, both me and the Company. As the former is only a Recapitulation, and the latter grounded on what I have thoroughly refuted, I shall take no Notice of them, but proceed, and shew how disingenious Mr. *Dobbs* is. In Page 81, he says I own, from *Kelsey*, &c. that a W. S. W. Moon made high Water at *Whale-Cove*; but he conceals that Part of *Kelsey's* Journal, where he says, that in Latitude 63° , of the West Side of the *Welcome*, which is near *Brook Cobham*, the Tide comes strong from the N. E. he calls it a soaking Tide, and says it flows, Neap and Spring Tides, from twelve to seventeen Feet. Now, this agrees with our Observations; but, as it destroys Mr. *Dobbs's* S. W. Tide, from the Lieutenant's imaginary

nary Openings, he has thought fit to suppress it. My Opinion upon *Scrogg's* Journal was, as may be seen in Page 116 of his Remarks, that his being set on the East Side was a Mark that the Flood came from the Northward; but I cannot see that his being set on the East Side can be a Proof, as Mr. *Dobbs* says, that the Flood came through broken Lands on the West of the *Welcome*. We imagined that the Course of the *Welcome* lay near N. and S. but we found, by Experience, that it lies nearer E. and W. He again says, " I own that the Eastern Tide is spent " at *Mansel's Isle, &c.*" This is an unfair Insinuation, that I spoke from my own Knowledge, grounded on Experience, he would not otherwise conceal my having spoke from the Information of his *Favourite Fox*, it was from his Accounts alone that I said this; for I myself never had an Opportunity to try the Tides at those Places. I shall now proceed to give him an Answer with regard to his *Tides, Currents*, and my *Frozen Straits*, as he is pleased to call them.

T I D E S, &c.

Mr. *Dobbs* has mention'd his *Tides* in no less than fifteen different Places, and to give a particular Answer to every one of these, would not only be irksome to my Reader, but be thought unnecessary, if, by one general Reply, I make it evident that Mr. *Dobbs* has written on a Subject which he does not understand; though, to do this, I am under an Obligation of quoting that Gentleman, and referring to some particular Places in his Remarks, to prove his Disingenuity, as well as Ignorance, relating to *Tides, &c.*

In Page 34, he says, my *Frozen Strait and Tide* is all false, calculated to impose on the Public. In this Paragraph he would insinuate, that the Tide was

wa
he
is
ma
wh
the
Ti
hor
of
and
be
fou
the
unf
we
here
pro
Th
Poi
of t
F
fible
Ship
Mist
Cou
Hig
Cloc
Vinc
his
plain
not
by
hono
form
for
Strai
a Mi
dicat

was near spent about *Carey's Swan's Nest*, but of this he knows nothing; all the Account of the Tide there, is from *Fox*, and he *Fox* tells you that his People who made the Observation were not to be depended upon, wherefore in his Return, he himself sat up all Night, the Ship at an Anchor, watched the Flow of the Tide and found in a Bay to the Southward of the Seahorse Point, not far to the Eastward of the Meridian of *Carey's Swan's Neck*, the Tide flowed 23 Feet, and says, that for any thing yet known, there might be a Passage into the *Welcome*: Now if *Fox* who found strong Tides at the farthest of his Discovery, the Tide could not be spent, as Mr. *Dobbs* would unfairly insinuate, at *Carey's Swan's Nest*; and that we may depend on him in this Point, what he has here said, is confirmed by later Observations, which prove that the Tide flows from the S. Eastward: Thus it is evident I had no Occasion to labour this Point, or allow the Tides occasioned by the Influx of the Western Ocean.

He takes Notice of my retracting. It is visible by the Council sign'd on board his Majesty's Ship the *Furnace*, August the 8th, 1742, that by a Mistake; I said Low-Water for High, for in that Council it was agreed, that a W. by S. Moon made High-Water that Morning, between 7 and 8 o' Clock: But I have already answered this in my Vindication: This Repetition of the same Charge in his Remarks, (as the Council above mentioned so plainly evinces my Error,) proves that Mr. *Dobbs*; not I, catches at Straws. I cannot but take Notice by the bye, of his giving his Friend Mr. *Allan* the honourable Post of a Spye; Mr. *Dobbs* desires to be informed, what we were doing after we came to the Boat for near 5 Hours, when I went on Shore to observe the Straits and Tides; to oblige him, I shall here give him a Minute Account. As I have already said in my Vindication, the Clerk, the *Indian* Linguist and myself returned

returned to the Boat at half an Hour past Four in the Afternoon, all very much fatigued, having walked and run for the first two Hours from Hill to Hill, in expectation that one would overlook the Whole, the Ground we had gone, we could only guess at, but as to the Time we spent, I can be very certain, for I had a good Watch with me, which no one else had who was ashore. As soon as I came to the Boat, I ask'd the Men whether the Tide was ebbing or flowing, and was not guilty of the Blunder, the Clerk has committed, in making me ask before *his* Low-Water, which way the Tide of Flood ran ; the Men told me that the Tide had flowed four Foot, when I asked them how they knew it, their answer was, they had let the Boat ground for near two Hours, and she was then afloat, and shewed me the several large Pieces of Ice aground, which had been almost dry, and had not floated the last Tide, I then sent them off to measure how much it had flowed, and had yet to flow, from the Marks left on the Ice the Tide before, and also by a Level, and a Pole, on Shore ; This took up an Hour's Time ; after that, *Wigate* and myself sat down to refresh ourselves, with a little Bread and Cheese and a Bottle or two of Ale, and by the Time we had done it was 6, and above half Flood. The Carpenter and Gunner, who had gone farther than we, returned, and had their Dinner to eat, which took up another Hour. One of our Lads who was to have carried the Compass after us lost his Way, and we waited for his Return till near Sunset; or 8, o'Clock, before we could put off the Boat, to go on Board. We were in a Cove with the Boat surrounded with Islands and large Pieces of Ice, and every one must know, no Stream of Tide could run there, which proves the Absurdity and Ignorance of the Clerk, in making me ask, which way the Tide of Flood ran, the Ship stood in near the Shore, as *Mr. Dobbs* says, until half an Hour past 6. when she

sh
to
th
an
as
run
I h
Fl
an
Lo
Lie
Shi
Cou
the
corr
not
East
take
Tide
low
we
Rive
Day
Morn
East
meet
E. an
the T
high
Strait
Augu
half a
and a
by Co
had 3
Shore,
high

she lay too open off the Straits, she was driven away to the Westward by the Tide of Flood, coming thro' the frozen Straits, which made us spend an Hour and a half in getting aboard, with as much fair Wind as the Boat could bear her two Sails, and did not run less than 9 Miles in the Hour and half. Thus I have accounted for our Time, this confirms the Flood coming as I have said from the frozen Straits, and ascertains what Moon makes high Water. The Log-Book shews the Time the Ship lay too; the Lieutenant's Answer to Query the 11th owns the Ship's driving to the N. E. on the Ebb: The Council held the 8th of *August*, and answers to the 5th Query in this Appendix, by *Donalson, &c.* corroborate the Lieutenant's Answer, but if this is not sufficient to confirm the Tides coming from the Eastward. I will begin from *Wager* River, and take notice what Observations were made of the Tides from thence to these Straits; and herein follow the Log. At 6, † in the Evening the 4th Day, we were abreast of the lowermost Island, near the River's Mouth, then the Tide had fallen a Foot a Day and a half before the full Moon; at 1, in the Morning the Flood was tried, we kept plying to Eastward in a fair Way between the two Shores to meet the Flood, which we found came from the E. and E. by N. near the Mid-Straits, having tried the Tides several times; an E. and W. Moon make high Water here as well as in the River *Wager*. The Straits are 13 Leagues from Side to Side. *Thursday August* the 5th, between 5 and 6 in the Morning, half a Mile from the low Beach we had 25 Fathoms and a very strong Tide of Flood, from E. and by N. by Compass, in those Narrows, we could see that it had 3 or 4 Foot to flow by the Ice being left on the Shore, at the last high Water, and that it would be high Water that Tide about 7 o' Clock, between

† *Vide* Log Book.

8 and 9 the same Morning. I sent the Master in the Boat to try if the Ebb was made to the Eastward, in the first Tryal he lost his Grapling, by the Strength of the Ebb which broke the Rope, and I made him try again finding the Ship drive to the Eastward from the Boat, they, in it, threw the Log as is customary, we found it run at the Rate of four Miles an Hour E. by N. by Compass, indeed this is not all minuted in the Log Book, but must be remembered by all that were then upon Deck, the Master's Answer to Query 14 takes notice of losing the Grapling in the Narrows of the new Straits, and says the Tide ran as strong again as off the head Land in $63^{\circ} 20'$. and there it ran two Miles an Hour. *Donalson*, &c. || in their Answers to Query the 4th also corroborate what I have here said.

August the 6th as per Log we lay too, between twelve and one, for the Tender, tried the Tide and found the Flood to come from the E. by S. the End or Point of the Beach S. S. E. four or five Miles. At $\frac{1}{2}$ past two sent the Lieutenant ashore to see how much the Tide had flowed, he gave me an Account that it had flowed 2 Foot, tho' I do not believe this is taken notice of in any Body's Log Book or Journal but my own; tho' we tried the Tides a hundred Times, 'tis possible we did not set them down once. At 3 we laid to for the Boat, and then tried the Tide and found it come from the Eastward, this is in the original Log Book, but want of Room has caused the Omission of many such small Remarks. Mr. *Dobbs* again catches at a Straw, in saying I put down in my Journal *Ebb* instead of *Flood*. I acknowledge the Error, which is in all my Journals; for his Friend and Witness *Wigate*, in transcribing the Journal from the Log made the Mistake, which is so evident by the Contradiction of its having ebbed 2 Foot, and the Flood coming from

|| *Vide* Appendix to these Sheets.

the

the Eastward, that Mr. *Dobbs* ought to have been ashamed of mentioning it; *Wigate* begins the Transactions the 6th Day of *August* as follows, *Moderate and hazy, lay too from twelve to one for the Tender, tried the Tide and found the Flood to come from E. by S. by Compass, found 45 Fathoms, the End or Point of the Beach: At 2. P. M. bore 4 or 5 Miles distant, here he has left out the Point of the Compass S. S. E. At $\frac{1}{2}$ past 2, sent the Lieutenant on Shore with a six oared Boat to try what Time of the Tide it was, found that it had ebb'd two Foot, and that the Flood came from the Eastward.* This is evidently a Blunder in Copying, for we could never mistake six Hours in two Days. We came out of *Wager* River the 4th, where we were very certain of the Time of the Tide, as it was high Water at Six that Evening in which we left it, and continued trying every two Hours to get the Course, and Direction, according to our Instructions. *At Three made Signal for the Boat to come on board.* As to the Lieutenant's being carry'd round to the Eastward, it is a Falsity; Mr. *Moor*, who was a-stern of us between Three and Four that Afternoon, was catch'd in the Narrows, by the strong Tide of Flood from the Eastward, which there held him by the Nose for some Hours. This is proved by our lying bye for the Tender. As to the Attestation of *Morrison*, *Armount* and *Humble*, it is a direct Contradiction; one of them says the Tide had ebb'd about the Beach Point two Feet. By the Lieutenant, Surgeon and Clerk's Answer to the eighth Query before the Admiralty, they acknowledge, that he, the Lieutenant, was not near the Shore to fix the Current of the Tide; but here one of these Attestators steer'd the Boat † to the low Beach Point. Thus, since the Publication of my Book and Chart, they have got ashore, and have blunder'd out a manifest Contradiction. The Tide

† *Vide* Page 154, Remarks.

set so very strong about the Point to the S. W. that they had like to have been driven round it, says the said Attestator ; yet with Sails and Oars, and a fair Wind, they could not get up to this Beach Point, the Tide of Flood setting so strong against them, that I was forced to lye by to take the Boat up ; the low Beach, when they had near'd the Shore, they brought to the Eastward of the S. E. yet these honest Men attest their having been carry'd round the said Point to S. W. by a Tide of Ebb. If Mr. *Dobbs* understood Tides and Currents, as he would have the World believe he does, and had, at the same time, the cool Use of his Reason, he certainly would not have suffer'd such contradictory Blunders to appear in Public to support his Cause, he would at least have inserted Probabilities, and not have let his Witnesses in one Place deny what they have asserted in another. When he thought the recalling the Lieutenant whom I sent to try how much the Tide rose and fell by the Shore, would serve his Purpose, I then was afraid of his making Discoveries, and would not suffer him to reach it, and this was supported by the Lieutenant, Surgeon, and Clerks Answer, but since that, he having thought it necessary to bring the Flood Tide from the Western *American* Ocean, the Lieutenant has been steer'd to the Low Beach Point, and the Boat was in Danger of being driven round to the S. W. by a Tide which would not suffer them to get the Length of it, but he could notwithstanding, observe at 4 Miles Distance, that it had fallen 2 Foot on the Point, his Witnesses also can remember that the Boat passed by the *Frozen Straits* within 2 or 3 Miles of the Mouth of it, and yet every one in the 2 Ships must know that while they were in the Boat they never came within 6 or 7 Leagues of it. The Lieutenant acknowledges in his farther Answer to the 11th Query, which I have before touched upon, that he
may

may remember that I gave him a strict Charge to take care that he was not hauld in, for that the Ebb was coming on, therefore bad him stand off from it, As it was High-water about 8* that Morning, I was satisfied, if at all, he would feel the Effects of the Ebb between 10 and 11, but if he stood farther off, he would be out of the way of the Indraught of that Strait, and the Tide would not run so strong.

I must here quote Mr. *Dobbs's* learned Paragraph, Page 38, as I design to be particular in my Answer; his Words are as follow. "After struggling very hard for this Tide at seven, and finding it won't do, he says, *what would it avail me if he granted it to me?* and so wants to raise Scruples, and make Difficulties about Tides in other Places. I say it will prove a great deal, and what he instances about the Time of the Tide from *Resolution* to *Diggs*, 136 Leagues, flowing that Distance in five Points from E. S. E. to S. by E. or in 3 Hours and 48 Minutes, and being but one Point in flowing down to *Albany*, 250 Leagues or 48 Minutes in Time, where a South Moon makes High Water; I suppose this to be Fact, and shall then shew his Error, or the Falacy he would impose upon the Public in this Postulate. All, who know any thing of Tides, are sensible, that if a South Moon makes High Water, a North Moon, the opposite Point, does so too; now since there is a Strait or Strong Tide in *Hudson's Strait*, and it is 5 Hours in running 140 Leagues, which is the Length of the *Strait*, and as the Tide in the Bay is spent, and consequently less rapid, it must in Reason, be longer in flowing 250 Leagues; and the Case is plain, it is so; for it is 17 Points in flowing down to

* *Vide* Answer to the 5th Query in the Appendix to these Sheets; and Master's Answer to Query 11th in my Vindication.

“ *Albany*, and a North Moon makes high Water there ;
 yet he would impose this Fallacy upon us, that it
 “ flowed in 48 min. instead of 12 Hours 48 min.
 “ so this great Difficulty vanishes. As to his Quota-
 “ tion from the learned *Dr. Hally*, it is here nothing
 “ to the Purpose, only to shew that he has read it,
 “ and applied it without Judgment.” *Mr. Dobbs* in
 this Paragraph, has taken a great deal of Pains to con-
 vince the World he is but a Smatterer with regard
 to the Tides, but as he has this Discovery so much
 at Heart for the Good of the Public, and for that
 laudable Reason may be induced to undertake it
 himself, that I may throw in my Mite towards the
 procuring this great Advantage to my Country, I
 shall here endeavour to enlarge his Understanding.
 First I must advise him, that he may be capable of my
 Instructions, to learn to box and quarter his Compass ;
 he must next observe that the natural run of a Tide,
 when it is supposed clear of all Rocks and other Im-
 pediments to obstruct the *Flux* and *Reflux*, must be
 6 Hours and 12 Minutes, or it would be High Wa-
 ter always at the same Place and Time ; every Hour
 of Time differs two Minutes of Tide ; that is to say, in
 30 Hours of Time it differs one Hour in Tide, and
 makes it one Hour later in being High or Low Water,
 whence 'tis evident, that the Notion of a natural Tide
 running 6 Hours, is erroneous: Next I will inform him,
 that supposing a South Moon makes High Water at
 any two Places ; for Example, at the *Nore* and *Pent-*
land Firth (the Channel which parts *Scotland* from the
Islands of Orkney) they being pretty near the same
 Meridian, for the *Nore* is about 4°. of Longitude
 to the Eastward of *Dungby Head*, which makes one
 Side of the *Firth*, now on such a Supposition, I
 would, I say, inform that Gentleman, that a South
 Moon makes High Water, on full and change Days
 at both Places, allowing only the Time which the
 4° Degrees of Longitude give (*viz.*) 16 Minutes ;
 confe-

consequently it will be High Water at the *Nore*, 16 Minutes sooner than in *Pentland Firth*; to continue my Instructions, as I find he has made a Blunder of 16 Points of the Compass, I would ask Mr. *Dobbs*, what Moon would make High Water four Days after the Full or Change, where it flows N. and S. for his Information in this Point, which he has evinced he cannot answer, by the above Error of 16 Points, I must tell him, that at any Number of Places, at or under the same Meridian, as often as the Moon comes to the true South, or transits the Meridian, so often at that Moment of Time, at all those Places, not only on the Full and Change of the Moon, but every Day between, eternally, that is I mean till the Dissolution of the World, according to human Probability, it will be high Water. By the common Rule in quartering the Compass, we are taught that the Moon is $\frac{3}{4}$ of an Hour, passing each Point or 45 Minutes; it will then be 6 Hours in going from the South to the West: And as I have observed that every Hour of Time the Tide will be 2 Minutes later, as will also the Moon, according to the common Rule; and when it comes to the West it will be Low Water, which will take 6 h. 12 m. later; when the Moon comes to the North or on the opposite Meridian, it will be High Water at the *Nore*, and at *Pentland Firth*, only allowing for the Difference of Meridians. At 12 h. 24 m. later, when the Moon comes round to the East, it will be low Water again at 18 h. 36 m. later than the Noon Tide: And when the Moon comes round to the South or Meridian again, it will be 48 m. after 12 at Noon, or 24 h. 48 m. in making the Revolution where you have 2 Floods and 2 Ebbs in the same Time.

This Rule will direct us how to fix the Tides in any Part of the World; having either High or Low Water: Then find what Point of the Compass the Moon should be upon at either, if she's out

of Sight; but in Case she is visible, you may observe it near enough, with the common Compass for any Use in Navigation, the Variation of the magnetic Needle, being also allowed for; *e. g.* suppose off *Tinnouth*, it is known to flow S. W. then as often as the Moon comes upon the S. W. and N. E. Points of the Compass, so often will it be High Water, allowing a Point and a half Variation. As often as it comes upon the N. W. and S. E. it will be then Low Water; as it will be at that Moment of Time in all other Parts of the World, where it flows S. W. as often as the Moon comes upon its Points of flowing and ebbing; allowing for the Difference of Meridians as aforesaid. Now in this common Rule there are no Impediments taken notice of. The Tides are frequently observed to vary their Course a full Hour, sometimes an Hour and half, as they happen to be accelerated or retarded by conspiring, or by adverse Winds, I mean not such as we may always feel; but Winds at a great Distance from the Place of Observation; but this Mr. *Dobbs* says in his next Paragraph, is all *prancing* and *evading*; I do not understand this Term of *prancing*, tho' I have been told it's adapted to the *Manege*, which we Mariners do not pretend to be acquainted with, and whether it is evading or not, I appeal to better Judges than Mr. *Dobbs* is of these Affairs. All able Mariners will be satisfied, that I have not endeavoured to impose on the Public and to deceive him in 16 *Points of the Compass*; but that Mr. *Dobbs* has deceived himself in just so many, by publishing a Blunder: To return; the Moon's Bearings are not always true, except when she is near the Equator, for at all other Times, she viciates her true Bearings or Azimuth very much but notwithstanding, this common Rule will do for all ordinary Uses, as to Tides, in Navigation.

This Gentleman is pleased to say, that my Quotation from the learned Dr. *Halley*, only proves that
I have

I have read it, and applied it without Judgment. I shall now convince Mr. *Dobbs*, that my allowing him his Tide at *Cape Frigid* could avail him nothing, as I have said in my Vindication; I have postponed it till now, as I design to support what I advance by the Tide Table, and shall dismiss this Point of the Tides; for if the Examples, I shall give, and those contain'd in that *Table will not convince him that he has hitherto talked without Book with regard to the Tides, as indeed with relation to almost every thing he has advanced, I shall esteem it loss of Time farther to attempt to reclaim him. As I have already said, granting him his Tide at *Cape Frigid*, what Service would it be to him? as at *Hamsound* and at *Hoymouth* in the *Orkneys*, and among all those Islands, as also at *Shetland* it flows S. E. by S. and in *Pentland Firth*, which is but 2 Leagues Distance from *Hoymouth*, and but one League from South *Ronalsha* it flows South; again it flows S. E. at *Winterton*; but the Flood runs into the *Nefs* 3 h. after it is High Water there: Now Dr. *Halley* says, that without an exact Knowledge of the Circumstances of the Places, as of the Position of the Land, and the Breadth and Depth of the Channels, there is no accounting for the *Phænomena* of Tides. We know all these Particulars of the Places here mentioned; yet I have heard of none who has attempted to give Reasons for so great a Difference in so little a Way; but Mr. *Dobbs* without being acquainted with any of these Circumstances, or being versed in the common Practice of the Tides, pretends to account for them in Places as yet undiscovered: I allow that part of his Instructions of meeting the Flood Tide is very good, if he would observe only from whence the Flood comes, and have no regard to the different Times of flowing; for if he should go in search of a new Ocean, it would deceive him. For Example, let us suppose him at an Anchor off of *Harwich*, not knowing where he was,

* Vide The Tide Table.

but that he wanted to find his Way to the Ocean ; he observes that there is a Flood coming from the Northward, and as all Floods come from some Ocean, he would order his Course that Way with the Ebbs, and meeting the Floods, which continue along the Coast, without having any regard to such *Openings* as *Rankin's*, but go on to meet the Flood ; in this he is not to be guided by his Eyes, for if once he trusted to them, he would soon loose himself upon the Wells, endeavouring to find a Passage up *Lynn*, *Boston*, and *Humber* Rivers, or *Edinburgh Firth* ; on the Coast of *Scotland* : If he comes off of *Buchamness*, or *Peterhead*, he will there have a South Moon, the same as he found it off of *Harwich*, and both from the Quantity of Water it flows, and from a South Moon making High Water at both Places, he would be apt to think himself as far off from the Ocean, as when he first sat out in search of it. Hence is evinced Mr. *Dobb's* great Mistake, in imagining a Passage is to be found by the *Sight*, and up Rivers against an *Ebb*, and also proves that the great Stress he lays upon the Difference of Time of High Water, the nearer to, or farther you are from the Ocean, is groundless. As this will not hold good in any known Place near Home, how can it be expected at Places farther Distance which are unknown ; but he has had all his superficial Knowledge, from his Favourite Oracle *Fox*. If Mr. *Dobbs* shall again insinuate, as I know he is fond of Repetition, that the Rise of the Tides near the Ocean is some Guide, let him observe the following Tide-table, and he will be satisfied that it is as unaccountable, as their Course or Time of High Water. At *Gravesend* it flows 8 Foot more Water than at the Isles of *Orkneys*, which are just in the Ocean ; at *Blythe* it flows 2 Foot less than at the Isles mentioned ; at *Cocket Island* not above 4 Leagues more North, it flows 3 Foot more than at the Isles ; about 5 Leagues farther North is *Berwick*, it flows

6 Foot

6 Foot more than at the *Orkneys*; at *Leith*, and all the *Peers* in *Edinburgh Firth*, it flows 2 Foot more than at the above *Islands*. And at *Sbetland*, which lies in the Ocean, as well as the *Orkneys*, it flows but 8 Foot, by which Irregularity is confirmed, what *Dr. Halley* says of the *Tides* not to be accounted for.

I shall now take Notice of some of *Mr. Moor's* Queries sent to him by the Lords of the Admiralty.

In Answer to the first Query, he says the Tides ran not above 3 Knots at the entering of *Hudson's Straits*, when clear of Ice; I answer, he knows nothing of it, for when it is clear of Ice, the Tide runs above 5 Miles an Hour, and for the Truth of this, I appeal to every able Mariner, who has made that Voyage.

But how do either of these Gentlemen know what Ice there was, to hinder our Searching Inlets, or Openings, as he says there was, in Answer to Query 7; for it had been contrary to my Instructions, to have ventured upon any Discovery, till we came to *Whalebone Point*, which was in the Latitude 65° ; consequently we never came near, or looked into any Inlet.

Mr. Moor in his Answer to Query the 11th, says the Tide ran 7 Knots in *Wager River*, for he hove the Logg, and the Ship ran by it 6 Knots, 4 Fathom, tho' at the same time she fell a stern; if he does not mean that this was at the Entering of *Wager River* he prevaricates, and does not answer the Query which is, "How many Knots did you find the Tide to run in *Wager River*;" If he answered the Question made to him, he has been guilty of a notorious and premeditated Falshood; as the Logg will shew that we had not Wind to run above 3 Knots, and that, among Ice, which caused our traversing very much, and hindered heaving of the Logg; the Tide flowed at 12 that Night the 13th of *July*, and he drove in and out 3 successive Tides, being enclosed

all the while in Ice, so that he had no Opportunity of trying the Tide in going into *Wager River*; in going out the 4th of *August* we had but very little Wind, and most part of that Time when we got into the Narrows, where the strongest Tide ran, it was Stark Calm, and we were obliged to row and tow all that Ebb, until we had got 3 or 4 Leagues out of *Wager River's Mouth*, and out of the strong Tide into the *New Straits*, but farther the Falsities contained in this Answer are manifested by the *Pink* being so heavy a Sailor that she could not run 6 Knots 4 Fathoms even in a clear Sea, without a very strong Gale of Wind, much less among Ice, when we were obliged to go with an easy Sail, seldom above 3 Knots for fear the Ice should stove our Ships*.

To Query the 12th, his Answer is, that the Men tasted of the Water about a quarter of a Mile from the Shore, and said it was not very salt; now this is contradicted by *Van Sobriek*, and *Guy*, one of whom makes Oath that they tasted the Water in the Mid Channel, which is about 3 or 4 Leagues up above *Deer Sound*: The other Swears to the Freshness all the way up from 3 or 4 Leagues above *Deer Sound*; so that the whole River was so fresh that the Men drank of it for want of Beer: *Price* says, he and others drank the Water, &c. Here are two Affidavits, and the Evidence of one Man to confront the bare Assertion of a Man who by my Remark and Query the 11th, is incontrovertibly proved to have but very little, if any, regard to Truth. He says farther, we might have got to the South Shore notwithstanding the Ice, and he believes that there was Ice driving with the Tide. I ask him if he does not also believe, we had much ado to get back again both from 4 Leagues above

* *Vide* Logg and Journal 13th of *July*, and 4th of *August*.

§ *Vide* *Price's* Report, who was in the Boat with the other two. p. 28 Appendix. *Vide* p. 143 *Vindication*. *Vide* *Guy's* Affidavit. p. 31. Appendix.

our Tent at *Deer Sound*, and again from *Deer Sound* to the Ship, on Account of the Ice; and that farther if we were not several times fast? It is indeed surprizing to me, that he is so tender here in his Answer, and has so boldly asserted Falsities already taken Notice of.

Now the Lieutenant in his Journal 24th, which was 4 Days after, says, to use his own Words; "I return'd with the Boat, the River being full of Ice, with the Northern *Indians*, having been 25 Leagues or better up the River;" this is a flat Contradiction to Mr. *Moor's* Answer to Query the 12th, and gives me ground to apprehend that it was calculated to serve Mr. *Dobbs's* Purpose, who will have it that there was no Ice to hinder our passing over to the other Side of the River at *Deer Sound*; farther, Mr. *Moor's* saying there was not Ice sufficient to prevent our going over, proves he spoke inconsiderately, without he could see 30 Miles Distant, tho' no body else can see Ice from the Mast's Head above 10 or 12 Miles Distant, except they are vast large Islands of Ice, and there are no such in that River.

To Query 13th we are informed by his Answer, that he was present, when the Lieutenant brought the 3 Bottles of Water down the River, and I gave it in as my Opinion, that the Bottle taken the highest up, was the Saltest; Mr. *Gill* was present, and handed the Bottles to me, which he can testify were but 2 in Number, and that I answered I found but little Difference; but not a single Word did I utter, about the Freshness or Saltness, but where these Bottles were filled, no one has said before the Appearance of my Vindication. It seem'd to me, that they were both fresh Water, taken from the Shore, which caus'd me to make answer, I found no Difference, neither could the Lieutenant, who was determin'd by the Opinion of others. He says only the Water, I think, was salt, but I have already taken Notice of this Modesty so very remarkable in Mr. *Rankin*.

Mr.

Mr. *Moor* says in Answer to Query 15, that the time Captain *Middleton* was a shore at the *Cape*, the Ships were set close into these *Straits* with the Tide, when we could plainly see the *Channel* running close to the *Low Beach* by the Ice driving the Breadth of these *Straits*. From *Cape Frigid* to the *Low Beach* is about 3 Miles.

How inconsistent is this Account, when *Cape Frigid* is put down several times in the *Logg Book* 2 Leagues the nearest Distance from the Ship, and then the *Low Beach Point* was 4 or 5 Leagues from the Ships, as may be seen in the *Logg*, the seventh Day at Noon, just after I got on Shore? The Words are these: " At 12 *Cape Hope* bore N. $\frac{1}{2}$ E. 6 Leagues; The *Beach Point* W. S. W. 4 Leagues, the Entrance of the *New Straits*, E. two Leagues, and even *Moor's* own Journal, by his Bearings of the Land, shews he was farther from his new Channel and Straits whilst I was ashore at *C. Frigid*, by several Leagues than where we first lay the Ships to; for in his Journal he brought *Cape Hope* to bear N. N. W. from him, which could not be Fact, unless he had been 3 or 4 Leagues to the Northward of the *Furnace*; yet 'tis notorious and can be testified by both Ship's Companies, the *Pink* was never above a Mile or two distant from the *Furnace*.

His other two Bearings taken off the *Beach Point* S. W. by W. and W. S. W. farther confirm it, and nearly agree with other Journals and Loggs; this is poor Cookery; but the Proverb says, *the more Cooks the worse Broth*: But farther, by their own Accounts in making *C. Frigid* an *Island*, at least 7 Leagues long, as they or the Gunner have lain down in his Draught, was it possible for *Moor* to see a plain Channel but 3 Miles wide, 27 Miles distant, and locked within the low Beach by the high Land that runs from *C. Frigid*? though this palpable Falstiry is very consistent with the Evidence of Mr. *Dobbs's* Witnesses. *Donalson*, &c. Reports, prove,

pr
M
A
So
ev
is
Sh
and
soon
Gen
Op
two
dou
tray
T
ther
the
such
Rive
Dra
wide
Leag
the T
from
in the
this I
Mr
were
ther it
Excuf
of Ne
might
Journ
once a
he lay
* See
Page 17
† Via
Appendi

prove, as they are confirmed by the Lieutenant and Master, that the Ship drove to N. E. and by this Account of *Moor's* she must have driven to the Southward at least 7 Leagues, which is contradicted even by *Mr. Dobbs's Waste or Logg Book*, where it is set down 7 or 8 Miles, the Beach distant from the Ship, instead of 4 or 5 Leagues; as all the Loggs and Journals mention; but *Mr. Dobbs contradicts this soon after, allowing it to be 4 or 5 Leagues.* This Gentleman has again mistaken, by putting down the Opening which is the *Frozen Straits*, S. W. and by W. two Leagues on which Point there is no Land at double the Distance, instead of E. S. E. This betrays his Judgment in Loggs.

To the next Query 16, he answers, he knows there was no * such strong Tide ran through between the *low Beach* and *C. Frigid*, although confined to such a narrow Passage, as that which runs in *Wager River*. I must here observe that the Gunner by his Draught makes these *New Straits* of *Mr. Moor's*, wider than he does the *Frozen Straits*, which are more Leagues, than *Moor* makes 'em Miles, no Body says the Tides ran above 4 Miles an Hour, 2 or 3 Leagues from the *Frozen Straits*, but it may run as strong in the Entrance as it does in *Wager River*, but all this I fear is of *Mr. Dobbs's Dictating* †.

Mr. Moor in his Answer to Query 17. says, we were seldom near enough the Shore to discern whether it was Main Land or Islands. and he makes an Excuse in the same Answer, to avoid the Imputation of Neglect in trying the Tides, which Trouble he might have spared himself; for he never once by his Journal tryed them during the Voyage, excepting once at *Deer Sound*, and once in *Savage Cove*, tho' he lay in the latter near 3 Weeks.

* See Master *Wilson's* Answer to Query 11, in my *Vindication* Page 177, 178. Vide Part of the Clerk's Answers *ibid.* p. 179.

† Vide *Donalson's*, &c. Answer to the 5th Query in the Appendix to these.

Mr. *Moor* himself shall here reply for me to his own Answer, by the following Abstract from his Journal.

August 9. He says, " The mouth of the River *Wager*, at 4 in the Afternoon, bore N. W. and " by W. Distance 7 Leagues ;" but in Mr. *Wilson's* and the Lieutenant's, at 2 the same Afternoon it bore N. W. $\frac{1}{2}$ N. 6 or 7 Leagues, as also in Mr. *Dobb's* Waste Book, which he has printed in his Remaks ; now these two Hours Difference, and near 2 Points in the Bearings, make us nearer to the Land by 3 or 4 Leagues, and more to the Southward at 4 or 5 o'Clock by 8 or 9 Miles.

August 10. He says, " Fresh Gales and fair " Weather, lying too with our Head to the S. E. " At 3 P. M. wore Ship up, N. by W. off, N. W. " by W. the Wind at N. E. by E. At 7 P. M. set sail, " kept N. by W. to get in again with the West " Shore. At 10 P. M. brought too again in Com- " pany with the *Furnace*, under our Topsails, " sounded 29 Fathoms. At 12 sounded 32 Fa- " thoms. At 1 A. M. sounded 35 Fathoms. At " 2 sounded 36 Fathoms. At three 35 Fathoms, " the extreme Points of the West Land in Sight, " bore N. W. by W. and N. E. Distance 4 or 5 " Leagues. At $\frac{1}{2}$ past 5 in the Morning, made sail " in Company with the *Furnace*, sounded 33 Fa- " thoms. At Noon saw the Land from the N. by " W. to the N. N. E.

August 11. " Moderate Gales. At 1 P. M. " sounded 30 Fathoms Water. At 8 P. M. saw " the Land from the N. W. to the W. by N. " Distance 9 Leagues, up Courses and lay too, in " Company with the *Furnace*. At 9 sounded 50. " At ten 53. At 11 sounded 55. At 12 sounded " 60 Fathoms. At 4 A. M. made sail in Company " with the *Furnace*, the Land in sight from the W. " N. W. to the N. W. by W. and N. E. Distance

" 4 or 5 Leagues. At $\frac{1}{2}$ past 5 *A. M.* made sail
 " in Company with the *Furnace*, the Land in sight
 " from the W. N. W. to the N. by W. Distance
 " 5 Leagues sounded several time had 20, 15, 14,
 " 27 and 18 Fathoms; rocky Ground. At Noon
 " the Land in Sight from the N. by W. to the
 " S. W. by W. the nearest Part N. W. by N. 4
 " Leagues.

August 12. " Fresh Gales and clear Weather.
 " At 4 *P. M.* the Northernmost Land in Sight bore
 " N. N. E. and the Southernmost bore W. Distance
 " 6 Leagues. At 8 *P. M.* brought to in Company
 " with the *Furnace*, sounded 35, 40, 40, 38, 40,
 " 45 Fathoms. At 4 *A. M.* made sail. At 8
 " sounded 60 Fathoms. At Noon the Land in sight
 " from E. by N. to the N. by E. sounded 40 Fa-
 " thoms.

I shall now prove from the Lieutenant's Journal,
 that Mr. *Moore's* Answer to Query 17, is notoriously
 false; and I think it pretty evident, calculated to
 carry on Mr. *Dobbs's* unjustifiable Views. Although
 we have before taken Notice of Part of what follows,
 in my Vindication, yet I am under a Necessity of
 here pursuing Mr. *Dobbs's* Method of Repetition.
 The following is an Abstract from Mr. *Moore's*
 Journal of 3 Days Transactions, the whole may be
 seen in the Appendix.

August 10. " Keeping as near the North Shore
 " as we could, to see if there were any Openings or
 " Passage into the Land, sounded 24, 29, 25, 35
 " Fathoms;" and on the 11th, he says, " we were
 " not above 3 Leagues Distance from the Shore,
 " saw several black Whales; hauled off to deepen our
 " Water;" and afterwards says in the same Day,
 " Kept along Shore all the way from the frozen
 " Straits, and find it to be a Main; many
 " small Islands and deep Bays; this Head-land
 " and the other in 64°. make a deep Bay; in the
 " Passage

me to his
 from his

the River
 W. and
Wilson's
 Afternoon
 s also in
 ted in his
 nce, and
 er to the
 ne South-

and fair
 the S. E.
 f, N. W.
 M. fet sail,
 the West
 in Com-
 Topsails,
 32 Fa-
 ms. At
 Fathoms,
 n Sight,
 4 or 5
 made sail
 33 Fa-
 ne N. by

P. M.
M. saw
 by N.
 too, in
 ded 50.
 sounded
 ompany
 the W.
 Distance

“ Passage out we did not see the Bottom of it, as we
 “ now have, by keeping close in Shore.” The 12th
 Day. “ At 8 in the Evening tack’d, try’d the Tide,
 “ came from the Eastward.”

Now ’tis evident from this Abstract, that Mr.
Moor, through his very great Complaisance to Mr.
Dobbs, and no doubt a little instigated by that Gen-
 tleman’s Promise of a Command on a future Ex-
 pedition, has had very little Regard to Truth, con-
 sequently to his own Reputation, when he answered
 to this Query 17, that we were seldom near enough
 the Shore to discern whether it was Main-land or an
 Island. †

On the whole, I think it’s evident to a Demon-
 stration, from his own Words, that Mr. *Dobbs*’s great
 Zeal for the Public, is nothing more than a Cloak
 to cover his private Views, and that the Disappoint-
 ment he has met with, in finding I was not to be
 made the Tool of his Interest, is the sole Reason
 can be given for the Inveteracy, and disingenuous
 and unfair Means he has made use of in his Attack
 on my Character, which if possible he seems resolved
 to blast, that he might disculp himself.

Flectere si nequeo superos, Acheronta movebo,

This, I think, his whole Remarks evince, was his
 way of Thinking, and I believe it is impossible to al-
 lege, nay, even to imagine any other than the above
 Reason, for the Virulency remarkable in the said Pam-
 phlet, since we were always upon very good Terms,
 till I refused to comply with Mr. *Smith*’s Request, to
 write to, and give Mr. *Dobbs* Hopes of a Passage,
though I thought otherwise. We may presume that
 Mr. *Smith* did not make me so idle a Proposal, with-
 out having received Instructions to that Purpose.

Whoever has read Mr. *Dobbs*’s Remarks and the
 preceding Sheets, if he is an impartial Reader, will

† *Vide* The Lieutenant’s Transactions in the Appendix.

be

be apt to think that the anonymous Letter, which Mr. *Dobbs* says (with a Politeness equal to the Modesty with which he has often asserted manifest Falsities) gave him the first Hint of my *Roguery*, was written by the Instigation of his Agent, who finding it vain to tamper with me, hoped and found greater Success with the venal Souls, whom he has gained over to the Interest of his Principal, possibly by immediate Rewards and Promises of Preferment, which latter if made with regard to *Wygate*, have been made good; as he is lately, I have heard, by Mr. *Dobbs's* Interest, made a Purser on board one of his Majesty's Ships. My Lieutenant who is the last of the three brought over, and who, poor Man! in manifest Contradiction to what he had before signed, was induced to corroborate with his Testimony, what Mr. *Dobbs's* Witnesses had advanced, and to say as he, probably, was directed, was soon after made a Lieutenant in a second Rate; tho' since the time he had been under my Command, having been made Lieutenant of the *Portsmouth* Store Ship, he was suspended for Neglect of Duty. These Rewards and Promises are not conjectural: Mr. *Dewilde* and Mr. *Macbeath* have made Oath that Mr. *Wygate* has boasted of them; Mr. *Dobbs* palliates, but does not deny them, and the Promises and Threats made use of to engage Mr. *Wilson* to appear against me, corroborate the Truth†.

The Reasons which I think evince that the anonymous Letter, which proves to have been written by *Wygate* and *Thompson*, was not spontaneous, or the Effect of public Zeal, (the Reason therein given) but that of Bribes, or large Promises, or both, are these. 1st We arrived in the River the 2d of *October*, and this anonymous Letter bares Date *January* the 2d 1742-3; here are three Months elapsed, and not one Word mentioned all this time, by any

† Vide Mr. *Wilson's* Affidavit p. 138. in my Vindication.

one of his Witnesses, of my *Roguery* in concealing the Passage, laying down false Tides, inventing a frozen Strait, &c. but on the contrary, these very Men were extravagant in their Commendations of me. If I may be allowed to say, with regard to my Treatment of them, I had some Claim to their Gratitude. These Encomiums on me, are vouched by the following Account, and Letters in the *Appendix*.

Secondly, Mr. *Dobbs* himself says, p. 74. of his Remarks, his Witnesses were both *loth* to *criminate* the Captain; yet these very Witnesses wrote the anonymous Letter. How shall we otherwise reconcile this Inconsistency, which Mr. *Dobbs* seems not to be aware of, than by supposing that they had been tamper'd with, by his Agents, who found them unwilling to be made Tools of, without a Consideration. If they were to enter into vile Measures, they would we may suppose, make their own Market, and be well paid; and the more backward they seem'd, the more likely were they to enhance the Price of their Evidence. We may farther suppose to reconcile the above Inconsistency, that Mr. *Dobbs's* Agents had Penetration enough to discover their Views; that accordingly he wrote to his Principal, and received Orders from him to bid up to their Price. *Thirdly*, This Silence with regard to my Misconduct, is surprising, as they knew he had on board my Ship three young Gentlemen, who were Mr. *Dobbs's* Friends, recommended by him to make the Voyage with me, and to these they might safely have open'd their Hearts; but neither to them, nor to any one else during the Voyage, nor after our Return, during the above Space, three Months, did they ever mention one Word of their great Concern, to see the Public so egregiously impos'd upon by my Artifices. *Fourthly*, The great Character they gave of me, could not be the Effect of *Policy*, to cover their Design of accusing me of Misconduct, till they

th
tw
on
be
is
the
ab
Ju
to
Ze
do
Ne
mu
of
and
wo
wa
rest
Re
beir
Wy
and
wh
did
ract
M
Let
be a
our
time
Acc
Defi
Wor
the
and
†
Appen

they had a proper Opportunity, for the following two Reasons: They might, the very Day they came on Shore, have lain their Accusation against me, before the Lords of the Admiralty; and indeed, it is surprizing, in Case they had not been brib'd, that they should apply themselves to Mr. *Dobbs*, preferably to their Lordships, who were the only proper Judges, both as they were invested with greater Power to protect, support, and reward them for their public Zeal, than was any private Gentleman; they could not doubt their Lordships Justice, or apprehend their Neglect of Men, who had the good of their Country so much at Heart; or their not making an Example of me, to deter others from imposing on the Public, and squandering the Government Money: They would patiently have heard, and liberally have rewarded these watchful Guardians of the public Interest, had they made good their Charge. My second Reason for the Character they gave me for its not being a political one, is, that they themselves, bear *Wygate* † in particular, which is that of a Sot, and of being very unguarded in his Discourse, when drunk; yet neither sober, nor in his Liquor, did he ever, during 3 Months, vary from the Character he first gave me, at our Arrival in the River.

My fifth Reason for believing the anonymous Letter was the Effect of Bribery, is, that nothing can be alledged for their Silence, during 3 Months after our Arrival in *England*: They cannot say, that this time was employed in drawing up their Heads of Accusation, since they suspected the Wickedness of my Design, as early as at *Cchurchill* Factory, from some Words I there let drop; which made them resolve for the public Good, to keep a vigilant Eye over me, and narrowly observe my Conduct, that my merce-

† Vide Mr. *Derwilde's* Report, p. 40. in the following Appendix.

nary Views might not be prejudicial to the Interest of their Country ; in the Service of which, they, who were no inconsiderable Persons †, are willing to venture their Lives, Fortunes, and all, in another Attempt. Consequently, it is reasonable to suppose, they regularly kept Minutes of all Transactions ; for Men, whose public Zeal was so remarkable, would hardly trust to Memory, lest any thing essential towards detecting me, might escape their Memory, and be, to the Prejudice of their Country, irretrievably lost. Having offered these Reasons for my Suspicion of the anonymous Letter having been concerted with Mr. *Dobbs's* Agent, I leave it to the Judgment of the Impartial, whether such Conclusion is unnatural, all Circumstances considered, viz. Mr. *Smith's* Request ; the humane, to say no more, Treatment these Witnesses received from me all the while we were Abroad ; their Silence during the Voyage in our Return home, and for three Months after our Arrival in the River ; their choosing to address themselves to Mr. *Dobbs* preferably to the Lords of the Admiralty, and by an anonymous Letter, rather than by one sign'd with their Names, or than by the Canal of the Gentleman's Friends ; the Character they every where gave me, during three Months, of having done more than any Man could, or ever would do hereafter towards a Discovery, which I had indisputably, to use their own Words, proved, was not to be made ; and the general Character *Wygate* in particular bears : I leave it, I say, to the impartial World, whether it is unnatural to conjecture that the Cause of this Silence was their having in reality no Ground for Complaint ? Whether subsequent Accusations were the Effect of Corruption ? For so sudden a Transition from exaggerated Praise to the most virulent Calumny, must be ascribed to some cogent Reason. And I think

† Mr. *Dobbs's* Remarks, p. 142.

Mr. *Wyate* being made a Purser of one of his Majesty's Ships of War, by the Interest of Mr. *Dobbs*, who, in his Remarks, acknowledged that he had tamper'd with these Witnesses, points out what the Reasons were.

Mr. *Dobbs*, has led the Government into a considerable and fruitless Expence, and, I believe, been himself greatly disappointed in his Views of a lucrative Trade, in Case we had succeeded in the wished for Discovery; or on its being found impracticable, of dissolving the Charter of the *Hudson's-Bay* Company, and laying open, as he acknowledges, the Trade: Tho', I am apt to believe, and not without some Grounds for such an Opinion, that could he dissolve the said Company's Charter, the Public would reap but very little, if any, Advantage; the Trade would be engrossed by a few private Merchants; and Mr. *Dobbs's* particular Interest would be primarily taken care of. For Mr. *Smith*, told me, that Mr. *Dobbs* was resolved to pursue his Scheme of laying open the Company's Trade; and that my writing the Purport of what he required, would be a means of facilitating that Gentleman's Scheme: In Consequence of which, he himself, Mr. *Smith*, expected some considerable Advantage. If the Agent had such towering Hopes, what were those of the Projector his Principal? Now, to avoid the Reproach of having occasioned an useless, public Expence, and to revenge himself on me, who by preventing the Sale of Goods, shipp'd as before mentioned, hindered him from diving into the Profits of the *Hudson's-Bay* Trade; to discover which, I suppose, that small Venture of a hundred Pounds was sent, he thought the properest Method, was to shift the Burthen from his own, upon my Shoulders, by charging the ill Success of the Voyage to my Misconduct, or to use his own Term, to my *Roguary*; and to persist himself, not only in asserting the

Probability, but even the Certainty of a N. W. Passage into the Western *American* Ocean ; as is evident from his imaginary specious Strait, fictitious Openings, chimerical Tides, and Dreams of an open, bold Passage, leading S. W. the only Course to be wished for. He could not impute our Disappointment of a Passage, to my Ignorance ; he himself having recommended me as a Person capable of the Undertaking. My Integrity is therefore to be attacked, and the Discovery not being made, to be placed to my wilful Neglect in my Search, or to my having found and concealed the Passage. But for this, some Reason must be alleged, or the Charge could have never gained Credit : He has therefore founded it on a Bribe from the *Hudson's-Bay* Company, to conceal the Passage ; and by terrifying Accounts, and imaginary Dangers, to intimidate all others from any future Attempts of a Discovery. To support this Accusation, which is to be the Evidence of my Corruption, my Conduct during the Voyage, is to be scrutinized, and proper Witnesses to that End, are, if possible, to be procured among the Officers and Men on Board the two Ships under my Command. And accordingly I may suppose, for Reasons above alleged, Mr. *Dobbs* employed his Agents here in Town, to find out from among the two Ships Companies, such as might be fit Tools to carry on his Views ; but this was as a Bisk in his Sleeve, his Sheet Anchor ; in case I could not be wrought upon to become his Instrument, to push his private Views, under the Mask of public Advantage, and at the public Expence. Mr. *Smith*, accordingly addressed himself to me, to write to, and give Mr. *Dobbs* hopes of a Passage, though I thought otherwise. I must own, he made me a great Compliment in this Proposal ; for it evidently shews, that he thought me both *Knave* and *Fool* ; his Views
in

in i
For
sign
Smith
Gov
Disc
imag
Tra
tage
Viol
tecti
For
Slav
he sh
ther,
prov
disco
Adm
upon
if a s
clude
Lette
as inc
fail'd
mean
amon
pose,
scienc
Conje
able o
his W
judgin
a Cler
their r
the Cl
be fee
they b
of thei

in it, I think, are obvious to every mean Capacity: For had I been weak, and dishonest enough, to have signed the Falsity required of me by his Friend Mr. *Smith*, he undoubtedly hoped he might induce the Government to enter upon a second Attempt of a Discovery; and had he herein succeeded, we may imagine he proposed from my Experience of the Trade, to have reap'd a very considerable Advantage, by carrying on a clandestine, or open one, in Violation of the Companies Charter, under the Protection of his Majesty's Ship, or Ships of War. For in such Case, I must have become Mr. *Dobbs's* Slave, and entered implicitly into every Measure he should have been pleased to prescribe me. Farther, as he is himself convinced, and his Letters prove it, of the Impracticability of a Passage being discovered, he could have disculp'd himself to the Admiralty-Board, by throwing the whole Blame upon me, who had given him the hopes of a Discovery, if a second Attempt was made; and I had been precluded from even offering at my Defence, by such Letter as was required of me to write, being produced as incontestable Evidence against me. But having fail'd in this weak Attempt, he had recourse by the means of his Agent to his Sheet Anchor, the searching among the Ship's Company if Tools fit for his Purpose, who had more Regard to Interest than Conscience, might not be found. It is true, this is a Conjecture only, but cannot be thought an unreasonable one, if the Reader will reflect on the Evidence his Witnesses have given in of their Incapacity of judging of Sea-Affairs, the one a Surgeon, the other a Clerk; their contrasted Conduct with regard to me; their respective Character shewn by Facts; that of the Clerk in particular, by Men of Credit, as will be seen in the *Appendix*; the Impossibilities (had they been capable of being Spies upon my Actions) of their discovering any wilful Neglect in my not searching

searching Inlets, &c. as the whole Ship's Company can attest, they were very rarely, either of them, upon Deck.

This Step having been taken, and Success crowning the Hopes of my Antagonist; that is, proper Witnesses having been found, I am attacked by an anonymous Letter, concerted, I may reasonably suppose, between Mr. *Dobbs's* Agent and these publick-spirited Gentlemen, his Witnesses. Mr. *Dobbs*, to be sure could know nothing of this Letter, he was in *Ireland*, and how is it possible that he should know what was here transacted? But be that as it will, I am accused of having imposed upon the Public; "*All Nature cries aloud, that there is a Passage*" †. And these Gentlemen, *Wygate* and *Thompson*, who wrote this anonymous Letter, are sure there is one from *Hudson's-Bay* to *Japan*. But I shall sum up this Charge against me, under the following Heads, which will take in every Thing material.

First, Corruption,

Secondly, Wilful Neglect, in slighting Informations of Openings, &c. in not searching where it was most likely to discover a Passage.

Thirdly, Laying down false Tides, and a fictitious frozen Strait; and endeavouring to deter others by intimidating Accounts, from all future Attempts,

Fourthly, Making a Salt Water Strait, a fresh Water River,

I shall, under these different Heads, give the Reader the whole Strength of the Evidence Mr. *Dobbs* has brought to support each respective Accusation, and in the opposite Column, not to burthen the Memory of my Reader, print my Defence; so that, at one View, he may take in the Sum of what is contained in Mr. *Dobbs's* Remarks, and the preceding Sheets, with some Remarks, which had

† Vid. their Letter, p. 142. in Mr. *Dobb's* Remarks,

escaped me, and have a fair State of the Case on either Side, and may thence accordingly form his Judgment.

I.

To prove the first Charge, Mr. *Dobbs* tells the Public, that I confessed to him the Offer of 5000 *l.* from the *Hudson's-Bay* Company, to conceal the Passage if discovered; or to search for one by *Straits Davis*; he however drops the Charge, and supposes that I accepted the Bribe of 120 *l. per Annum*, for two Years, and insinuates that there was farther Advantages in some private Article in my Treaty with the Company; for by the Evidence of Mr. *Wygate*, I had boasted to Mr. *Ellis*, of the *Victualling-Office*, that I could be, whenever I pleased, a Director of the *Hudson's Bay* Company. As a farther Evidence to prove my Corruption, Mr. *Wygate* and *Thompson* charge me with Words, which must put it out of all Dispute, viz. that I would be a better Friend to the Company than

I.

I absolutely deny, that the Company or any one on their Behalf ever offered me one single Shilling, to either conceal the Passage or search for it contrary to my Instructions, or that I ever told Mr. *Dobbs* they had made me any Offers to that end; I think the Truth of this is apparent from the Absurdity of my rejecting 5000 *l.* to accept the precarious Sum of 240 *l.* which I might never live to receive. Mr. *Ellis* denied, in the Presence of several Witnesses of the *Victualling-Office*, that I ever made any Boast to him, that I might be made a Director in the *Hudson's - Bay* Company, whenever I pleased. These two Points are supported by no Proof; we have Mr. *Dobbs's* Word for the one, and Mr. *Wygate's* for the other; the latter contradicted by the very Gentleman named to support it. As to the
Words

ever, and would make the Voyage, and no Man but myself should be able to know whether there was a Passage or not ; to these Words the said Messrs. *Thompson* and *Wygate* have made Oath, which Deposition is printed in Mr. *Dobbs's* Remarks, p. 148. N^o 40. Mr. *Moor* in his Answer to *Query* the 4th, p. 65. of Mr. *Dobbs's* Remarks, is also given as Evidence to this Point, but unhappily what he says makes against the Deposition,

Words spoken, Mr. *Moor* in the Place quoted in the opposite Column, they are, that he heard me say I *could* make the Passage, and no Man on board should know whether there was one or not. Here is a very essential Difference between the Words *would* and *could*, the former makes Nonsense, and the latter shews my Contempt of the Ignorance of those, whom, at that Time, I reproached with their Vain-boastings. I acknowledge that I said I *could* make the Voyage, &c. and 'tis Truth. As to the subsequent Words, they differ in this Charge, in the Words *ever* and *expected*, used by Mr. *Dobbs*, printed in my Vindication, p. 48. I said it was in my Power to be a better Friend to the Company than they *expected*. If the Reader will give himself the Trouble to peruse their Letter to the Lords of the Admiralty, directed to Mr. *Corbett*, the Secretary, in the following *Appendix*, p. 4. he will observe, that they were under

At
the
far
tio
the
Ac
lect
this
form
Lor
Cbu
Op

under great Apprehensions from my Voyage, not only of an Infringement upon, but even of the Ruin of their Trade; and as I was resolved to give them no Cause, by suffering a clandestine Trade to be carried on, to complain hereafter that their Fears were but too well grounded: And by keeping this Resolution, I proved a better Friend to the Company, than they expected; but I fear my so doing, is the real Ground of Mr. *Dobb's* Inveteracy, and the Accusations he has brought against me, *vide* p. 75, 76. of preceding Sheets for a more particular Answer.

II.

I answer, that these Openings are meer Inventions; as to my having Information from *Lovegrove* there is no Proof; and Mr. *Dobbs* could only have it by Hear-say from one of his two Witnesses, *Wygate* or *Thompson*; for *Lovegrove* himself is at *Churchill* in *North America*, and if he had by Letter acquainted Mr. *Dobbs*

II.

The second Head of Accusation, which, with the subsequent, are to farther prove my Corruption, as that is to prove the several Heads of my Accusation, is wilful Neglect, &c. To support this, the Public is informed, that I knew from *Lovegrove* and others at *Churchill*, that there were Openings at *Whale-Cove*,

in 62° 30', and from the Lieutenant, that there was also an Opening at *Marble Island*.

In p. 13. of Mr. *Dobb's* Remarks, he says, that from the Journal he had discovered, that I had slighted all the Coast, where the Passage was most promising.

In p. 18. he gives in the Master's Evidence, who overlooked all the Islands to the Northward, which were between the Branch they were in, and the main Channel, and saw beyond them a fair open Channel four or five Leagues wide, the Course running S. W. betwixt high broken Lands; the said Master would have gone farther to have try'd the Current and Strait he saw, but the Lieutenant told him, his Provisions were spent, and that he had exceeded his Warrant in going so far, and staying so long, and durst transgress no farther: To which the said Master replied, *To what Purpose are we come so far, if it be not to make a Discovery of the Passage.* Again, the

Dobbs with having given me any Information of any Opening or Openings at *Whale-Cove*, he ought, to engage the Belief of the Public, to have printed such Letter in his *Appendix*; but indeed this Opening, and the Lieut.'s *Marble Island* are the Fruits of a fertile Invention. I have shewn in p. 10. that it was impossible for the Lieutenant to make such Discovery; but it is observable that neither his, nor any Journal, not even Mr. *Dobb's* favourite waste Logg-book makes any Mention of these imaginary Openings. Surely the Lieutenant, had I been guilty of so flagrant, so bare-fac'd, wilful a Neglect of Duty, would, as it was his, have taken particular Notice of it; and could not, as an honest Man, but have accused me at our Return, to the Lords of the Admiralty, of a design to defeat the Discovery: But farther, *Cuy*, who was with the Master higher up the *River Wager* than any other of the two Ships Companies, and

said Master saw, near *Deer-Sound*, large Whales, as true black Whales as any in *Greenland*, which he said must have come from the Westward, and never came in at the East Entrance of the River *Wager* from the *Welcome*, or they would have been seen below.

P. 19. The Master told Mr. *Dobbs*, that there was no Ice near *Deer-Sound*, to prevent our Passage, nor any to the Westward of the Bluff they were at, but all was an open Sea: That by the Observations he had made of the Tide near *Brook Cobham*, there were great hopes of a Passage there; that he had asked leave of the Captain to go on Shore to observe them, but was refused. This the Clerk asserts, in his Answer to *Query 13*, p. 182. in my *Vindication*; for he heard me tell the Master that he should not go a-shore again till he came to *England*. The Surgeon in Answer to the same *Query*, says, That when the Master was desirous and who is the Man Mr. *Dobbs* allows a material Witness, has sworn, that he saw none of these Openings. See his *Affidavit* in the following *Appendix*.

In Answer to this Discovery from my Journal, of sighting the Coast where it was most promising; I say, it is a bare Assertion of Mr. *Dobbs*: He ought to have pointed out if he had expected Credit, that part of my Journal, in which he made this Discovery; for I aver, that we left no probable part of the Shores unsearched. The Master in Answer to the 12th *Query*, p. 179. in my *Vindication*, says, we made sure to search all the West Shore, so near as to see all the Bottoms of the Baies, and plainly make it main Land; that we took all necessary Precautions, that we might miss no Place which appeared like Openings or Inlets. That we were within 3 or 4 Leagues of most Places, and where it was bold within 2 Leagues, and were sure

of

to go ashore on account of the Tide at *Marble-Island* rising 22 Foot, the Captain told him, He should be damn'd before he went a Shore again, till he came to *England*. Both he and the Clerk, in the same p. 182. vouch, the Weather was fine, the major part of, or almost the whole Voyage; as the Surgeon in particular says. This was in our Return.

P. 26. *ditto*. The Lieutenant says, there is great Probability of an Opening on the West Side, by the coming in of the Whales. The Whales coming in from the Westward, which speaks the Probability of an Opening on the West Side, is supported by the Surgeon's Answer to *Query* 4, p. 161, 162. *Vindication*: Where he says, 'Tis my real Opinion, that those Whales come in at the West End of *Wager-River*; from whence he also judges, that there is great Probability of a Passage from thence to the S. Westward. And the Clerk

of the main Land all the Way. The Log-book shews, that on the 10th of *August*, we were at 8 o'Clock within 3 Leagues; nay even at 4 that Morning, we were within 4 or 5 Leagues of the main Land, and in 35 Fathom Water by the Log. At 10 the said Morning, the Log shews, we kept as near Land, as we could; in 25, 26 Fathom Water; the Lieutenant's Journal 11th Day *Vide* the Navy-Office, proves, that we kept as near the Shore as we could, to see if there were any Openings or Passages in the Land; and continued sailing in Sight of the main Land of the North Shore, quite from *Cape Hope*. That by coasting along the Shore of the *Welcome*, from the frozen Straits, he found it was the main Land, tho' there are several Islands and deep Bays; that we saw the Bottom of them in our Return, and by keeping close in Shore, we saw several black Whales, *Towns* (*Vide* p. 141, 142, 143, *Vind.*) swears that

imagines, that these Whales came thro' Channels on the West Side of *Wager River*; and is also of Opinion, that there is a Western Ocean nigh *Brook Cobbam* and *Wager River*.

P. 28. Mr. *Dobbs* says, the S. W. Side was never tried at all, by crossing over opposite to, or below *Savage Cove*, was nothing to the Purpose: I ought to have passed opposite to *Deer-Sound*, which might have been passed much sooner. Mr. *Moor*, in his Answer to *Query 12*, p. 168. *Remarks*, says, that there was not so much Ice to prevent our going over above *Deer Sound*.

In p. 29. Mr. *Dobbs* charges me with Neglect, in not searching the West Side of the *Welcome*. This he says, is proved by the Log-book; by a long Detail of Particulars in the said and subsequent Page, he endeavours to evince the Impossibility of my having searched it. He expressly charges, that I only stood in with Head-lands, never search- we examined all Shores; that we kept a constant Look-out: And that notwithstanding my ill State of Health, I kept the Deck 48 Hours together. *Van Sobriek*, (*Vid.* p. 144. *Vind.*) swears, that we were sure of the main Land all the Way between *Brook Cobbam* and *Cape Dobbs*; that we were never above 3 or 4 Leagues off the main Land, except in one or two Places, where meeting with shoal Water, we lay too in the Night, that we might pass no Place unseen; that we stood in Shore in the Day: and that off the head Land in Latitude $63^{\circ} 20'$, we were not 2 Leagues from Shore. *Grance Grant*, (p. 145. of my *Vindication*) makes Oath, that Capt. *Middleton* was careful above all Things to search all Shores; and chose to lie by in the Night, rather than pass by any Straits or Inlets that might afford a Passage. Mr. *Carew*, First Mate of the *Discovery* Pink, in Answer to the 12th *Query* in the following

ed the Bays within them for Inlets or Openings, and never once attempted to send my Boat on Shore. To support which, he gives in the Evidence of the Lieutenant, Surgeon, and Clerk, who said they could only see the Tops of Mountains at a Distance, here and there, as it were in the Clouds. The Lieut. also supports this Charge in his Answer to *Query 12.* in the following Words: " I could
 " never properly distinguish the head Lands
 " in our Return from
 " Cape *Frigid* to *Brook*
 " *Cobbam*, and did not
 " come nearer to the
 " West Shore than 5 or
 " or 6 Leagues. We
 " searched neither Inlets
 " nor Bays, nor came
 " we near enough to any
 " Land to the Westward
 " to distinguish it." The Surgeon makes the same Answer in almost the same Words. And the Clerk says, that it appears from different Journals and Log-books, that we were not nearer to that Land; that is, the West Shore, than 5 or

lowing *Appendix*, p. 58. says, on our return from *C. Frigid* to *Brook Cobbam*, we were sometimes 2, 3, and 4 Leagues from the Shore, but not often much farther. It's true, at Night, we laid the Ships too, that we might pass by no place undiscovered, that appeared like Openings; and sometimes we plied to Windward, to hold our own 'till clear Weather and Day-light, but saw no Appearance of any Openings, all along from the farthest we went to *Brook - Cobbam*, except *Wager* River and the frozen Straits; all the West side, main Land and very high. *Guy* swears, (*Vide the Appendix*, p. 4.) That all the way between the River *Wager* and the Latitude 63° or *Brook - Cobbam*, they were sure of the main Land, and were never about 3 or 4 Leagues off, excepting in one or two Places; where, meeting with shoal Water, we lay too in the Night-time, and thick Weather, that we might
 not

6 Leagues. Mr. Dobbs afterwards, by a long Detail, &c. in p. 30, 31. shews that I might have sent my Boat on Shore. As a Proof of this, I towed the Ships out of *Wager River*, with two Boats a-head. Secondly, at the low Beach, I sent her with the Lieutenant, but repenting, recalled him. Thirdly, on the 8th, I went a-shore myself, but on the 9th, 10th, 11th and 12th, my Men were all sick again; and no Boat durst be trusted a-shore, altho' it was fine Weather, and not hazy, as I affirmed, and there was no Ice on the Shore. From these Circumstances he concludes, That what I have said on this Head, is ALL *sham Evasion, and Tricks to impose upon Mankind*. And this he proves by the Surgeon having produced his Books at the Admiralty; by which it appeared, that out of 53 Men on board the *Furnace*, there were but 8 unserviceable.

In the same, p. 31, by way of Interrogation, he charges me with never

might not pass any Place unseen, and stood in Shore in the Day; and that off the head Land in 63° and 20, we were not 2 Leagues from it, in 9 Fathoms Water; we coasted all along Shore, and anchored at *Brook-Cobham*.

P. 47. in the following *Append. Donalson, Cooper, Iverson, Monro, Gill*, in Answer to *Query 6*. That in our return from *Cape Frigid*, we saw the Land all along very plain, and kept as near it as the Rocks and Islands would permit us, all the Way from *Whalebone Point* to *Brook-Cobham*; that we rounded all the Bays; that we were seldom above 3 or 4 Leagues off the Shore, &c. See the *Query and Answer at large*.

In Answer to *Query 8*. They say, that there was never any Suspicion of my having neglected the Discovery; on the contrary, that I encouraged every Officer and Man in his Endeavours to make one. See p. 48. in the *Appendix of these Sheets*.

The

suffering any Person to go ashore, to try the Flood.

He next charges me, that I quitted the Discovery when I left *Wager Strait*, on the 3d of *Aug.* an open bold Passage *, leading S. W. the only Course wished for. That I neglected the Discovery by going N. E. and returning from *Cape Frigid* without searching any Inlet. That when I was informed of a fair Opening †, and a strong Tide of Flood from the Westward, I would not suffer it to be tried. Farther,

In *p.* 44. he says, that I allow *Mr. Rankin's* Opening, which the Surgeon also saw from the Top - mast - Head ; but

* This Account of an open bold Passage, is supported not only by what the Master said to *Mr. Dobbs*, but by the additional Account from the Lieutenant ; who says, he went up a Mountain, from whence he saw a large and spacious Strait, leading away to the Southward of the West, or W. S. W. or more Southerly by Compass. See *p.* 63. of *Mr. Dobb's Remarks*.

† This Opening, and a strong Tide of Flood from the Westward, is supported by the Lieutenant, *p.* 153. in *my Vindication*. He there gives a Draught of the Cove upon *Brook-Cobham*, or *Marble Island* ; and says, the Tide came in suddenly from the W. N. W. round the North West end of the Island. And farther, that when he desired to go thither, I said it did not signify much, &c.

The Master's Evidence given in by *Mr. Dobbs*, is from his Minutes, after the said Master had left him, as he says in *p.* 18. of his *Remarks*. Consequently it is *Mr. Dobbs* who speaks for him, whatever he thinks most conducive to support his Accusations ; and is to be considered in no other Light, than mere Invention. And I think it is evident to a Demonstration, that the Master could not, and did not say, what *Mr. Dobbs* minuted, the Moment he left the Room, from this one Particular, *viz.* That he would have gone farther up the River *Wager*, but the Lieutenant for one Reason, for his not

agreeing

nothing could induce me to suffer it to be tried.

In p. 51. He charges me with making Slaves of my Men ; by obliging them to lie upon their Bellies upon the Surface of the Ice to cut the Ship's loose, for no other Reason but to frighten them from ever undertaking such a Voyage again ; and by the dismal Stories of their Hardships to intimidate others. Whereas the Slavery was intirely usefess ; for Nature does in a few Days, all that these poor Fellows had been labouring at, for near three Months : And farther, my Account of being fast in Ice, in *Hudson's Straits*, for some Days in *Sept.* is another intimidating Evasion.

Mr. *Dobbs*, has before taxed me with threatning to break open all their Boxes who kept Journals, and taking their Books and Papers from them. In his *Remarks*, p. 61. he says, *No body pretends that he durst binder the Lieutenant, and Master from keeping Four-*

agreeing to it, said, that his Provisions were spent ; yet the said Master knew that they had on board the Boat two whole Deer. But the Master will in the Sequel speak for himself, as he has done in Answer to *Query 12.* with regard to searching the West Shore ; which Answer flatly contradicts Mr. *Dobbs's* Assertion, supported by all his Witnesses, that it was never searched at all. But to shew the great Improbability of his having held, with Mr. *Dobbs*, the Discourse which that Gentleman has given in as material Evidence against me, I beg leave to lay before the Reader, the Answer he gave into the Admiralty, under his Hand, to *Query* the 5th, and to *Query* the 20th : To the former he says, " I have heard the Captain say, that he would put up with all that could be endured, rather than the Discovery should be baulk'd. He never hindered any Body from keeping what Account they

nals ; it is great part of their Duty. But it was the Surgeon, and Clerk, that he suspected of keeping Journals, and making Observations ; notwithstanding it was no part of their Duty to keep any ; I suppose Journals.

The Clerk, p. 192. in my *Vind.* in answer to Query 20. tho' he does not expressly say, I discountenanced and discouraged every one on Board, with threatening Words ; yet it is there insinuated that I did. I know of no other, or stronger Evidence to support this Charge ; or I would have taken Notice of it: As I would not deprive Mr. *Dobbs*, of the least Advantage he can make, to support his Cause.

In p. 66. he says, that I had a finer Harbour near *Deer Sound*, free from Ice, than was that of *Savage Cove* ; and from the former, I might have gone Westward without Ice.

In p. 69. Mr. *Dobbs* intimates, that I threatened the Surgeon for cor-

“ they would ; and
 “ would always readily
 “ instruct any Officer
 “ that would ask him,
 “ in observing the Lati-
 “ tude, Variation, or any
 “ other curious Matter ;
 “ and shewed several how
 “ to keep Journals, that
 “ had never been at Sea
 “ before”. P. 163. *Vind.*

To the latter he replies,
 “ The Captain seemed
 “ on all Occasions, hear-
 “ tily to encourage the
 “ Discovery ; and was e-
 “ ver free in communica-
 “ ting with, and instruct-
 “ ing every Officer and
 “ Man on Board, either
 “ in Navigation or the
 “ Seaman's Part, as none
 “ is better qualified to do
 “ it ; and the Lieute-
 “ nant, and myself, have
 “ experienced the Bene-
 “ fit thereof, and must
 “ own it : And to repre-
 “ sent him in any other
 “ Light, I am thorough-
 “ ly satisfied, is doing him
 “ barbarous Injustice.”
 P. 191. *Vind.*

My refusing the Mas-
 ter to go ashore, as
 Mr. *Dobbs* says, he had
 from his own Mouth, is
 a farther Proof that the
 whole

responding with the *Indians*, and for attempting to come at the Knowledge of a Passage by their Means. This Hint is by way of *Query* to my self, and founded up on an Assertion † of the Surgeon, that I would cut off his Ears, and take away his Books and Papers, if he had any farther Correspondence with the two unfortunate *Indians*, with whom I forbade his conversing; as appears, p. 147. *Remarks*.

In p. 70. Mr. *Dobbs* taxes me with putting the *Indians* ashore in a barbarous Manner, contrary to their Inclinations, as they were desirous to come to *England*: For I apprehended they would make a Discovery, which might prejudice the Scheme I had entered into with the Company: What that Scheme was, he has before shewn to be a Concealment of the Passage to the Western *American* Ocean. To support this, he has the Evidence of his two Witnesses, *Thompson* and *Wygate*.

whole Evidence is a Fiction of my Antagonist; for in his Answer to *Query* the 13th, he has these Words: " I can't recollect, that the Captain ever hindered my going ashore upon any such Account, viz. to make Observations on the Tide, as it is in the *Query*; or did I desire of him to go ashore."

As to the Lieutenant's great Probability of an Opening on the West Side by the coming in of Whales, I ask from whence did these Whales come, on which he grounds this great Probability? He never told me of this Probability; he never mentioned it to the Lords of the Admiralty; consequently failed in his Duty. In his Answer to *Query* 2. he says he saw a great Opening, or large Collection of Waters, to the Northward of the Islands which were in the River, (viz. *Wager*) or Straits; and there appeared broken Lands to the Westward, and high and mountain-

† Vide *Vind.* p. 186, 187.

This Charge of Cruelty, is supported by the Surgeon and Clerk's Answer to *Query* the 1 8th, p. 188, 189, in Mr. *Dobbs's Remarks*. The former says, that the Capt. order'd them into an old, leaky Boat with two Oars, a Mast and Sails, which neither of them knew how to manage. One of them cried very much at the Apprehensions of the Dangers they should be expos'd to, far from their Families, in a strange Place, in the midst of their mortal Enemies; who would first scalp them, and then devour them. But all this would not prevail on the Captain; for they were actually forced over the Ship's Side into the Boat, towed ashore upon *Marble Island*, and there left in the Latitude 63°. The Clerk only says, the *Indians* were desirous of coming to *England*, and with aching Hearts, poor Creatures, were put on Shore. He then refers to the Surgeon's more particular Account.

ous as the Cape of *Good Hope*. But this unhappily contradicts his new, additional Account, p. 62, 63, *Remarks*: Where he saw large spacious Straits, leading to the Southward of the W. or W. S. W. or more Southerly; but no body ever saw any Whales much above *Deer Sound*, &c. and he was then 15 or 20 Leagues above that Place. The Lieut. in his Answer to *Query* 4, p. 161. says, I saw a great number of black Whales of the Whalebone kind, in and near *Deer Sound*, and no where else, except at *Brook-Cobham*. If he saw them no where else, except at *Brook-Cobham*, he certainly saw none 15 or 20 Leagues above *Deer Sound*; neither had he Reason to imagine, that these Whales came in through the Channels, bounded by broken Lands on the West Side. Indeed, these Channels are imaginary, without we can suppose, that the Lieut. could see and distinguish Channels about 36 or 39 Miles distant from

I have now placed in their full Light, all the Evidence Mr. *Dobbs* has given in to support this Head of wilful Neglect. I don't believe I have omitted the least Thing that he has advanced to support that Charge: But if I have chanc'd to overlook any thing Essential, it has been undesignedly; and upon the least Hint, shall be ready to acknowledge it, and give in a full Answer. Wherefore I shall proceed to the third Head of his Accusations; which is laying down false Tides, and fictitious frozen Straits, &c.

from him as from *Deer Sound* to the West Shore. The Master, in Answer to the same Query, says, the Whales we saw about *Deer Sound*, I believe came in at the Mouth of *Wager River*, or from some other Inlet from the Eastward to the new *Frigid Strait*; which seems the more probable, as not being far from *Baffin's Bay* and *Davis's Straits*, where the greatest Number of Whales are seen.

As to what the Surgeon says, we have only his Opinion, without any Reason to support it. And as to the Clerk, he only imagines that the Whales came from the West Side of the River, but does not say on what this Imagination is grounded. I shall only observe, that *Brook-Cobham* and *Wager River*, near which two, the Clerk is of Opinion, that there is a Western Ocean, are about 200 Miles Distance the one from the other. But I have bestowed too much Time upon this trifling Charge, and therefore shall close
it

it with a Remark of Mr. Carew's, viz. " This " may be observed as " very material, in an- " swer to Mr. Dobbs's " making *Wager River* " a Strait of Salt Water ; " as it did not appear " from any Accounts " or Reports, that one " Whale was seen above " *Deer Sound*, where the " Water was fresh, and " several were seen be- " low and without the " Mouth of *Wager Ri- ver* ; and from four " Leagues above *Savage Sound*, quite down to the Entrance of the " River, was seen every " where Store-houses of " Oil, Whalebone and " Blubber on the North " Side, and none seen " above, where the Wa- " ter was fresh or brack- " ish, is a Certainty of " its being a River ; " no Whales come into " fresh Water, or could " any come from the " West End of *Wager River* : For the above " Reason, which will I " think amount to a " Demonstration to all " reasonable Men." *Vid.*

p. 64. of the following
Appendix.

It is certain I did not cross over to the S. W. Side opposite to *Deer Sound*, and, as certain, notwithstanding Mr. *Moor's* Evidence to the contrary, that we attempted it. *Price*, Carpenter's Mate of the *Furnace*, p. 28. *Append.* says he is ready and willing to make Oath, that he went in the Boat with Captain *Middleton*, 3 or 4 Leagues above *Deer Sound*, on *Sunday* the 19th Day of *July* 1742, endeavouring to get over to the South Side (properly to the West Side) but could not, for Ice above half the Way.

The West Side of the Welcome was not searched at all: This, and my having sighted all the Coast where the Passage was most promising, are the same Charge in different Words, and my Answer to one is an Answer to both, except in some Particulars, for which Reason I have made it a distinct Head. I must here observe that

the Lieutenant who supports this Charge in Answer to Query the 12th contradicts his Journal; for he could see 13 Leagues at *Deer Sound*, and now can't see 2 or 3.

I might have sent my Boat on Shore: I answer, that tho' I had ever so healthy a Ship's Company, there was no manner of Necessity of sending the Boat ashore, till we had lost our Tides in *Repulse Bay*; but supposing I had lain under a Necessity of sending the Boat ashore; the Master proves it was not practicable in his Answer to *Query 13, p. 181. Vind.* Where he says, That when she (the Boat) was mann'd, we could not find Men to work the Ship, or reef a Sail, or hand one: That they grew worfe and worfe every Day; and that we had not above six in both Watches, besides three or four Officers. *Towns* swears, through the Sickness and Lameness of a great many, and Unskilfulness of some, the Ships would not in all Probability

bility have ever reached
England again, if it had
 pleased **GOD** to take
 away *Capt. Middleton.*
Vide Vind. 141, 142.
 143. *Van Sobriek* swears,
 that out of 20 Men that
 they had on board the
Discovery, from *Churchill*
 home, there were not
 above 4 or 5 in a Watch
 able to go aloft, to reef or
 hand a Sail, tho' that Ship
 was better mann'd than
 was the *Furnace*; inso-
 much that in *Wager Ri-*
ver, they were forced to
 send most of their Hands
 aboard the *Furnace*,
 where they had but few
 beside sick Men. *Vind.*
 143, 144, 145. *Grance*
Grant, in p. 146. of my
Vind. swears, that both
 Ships were so ill officer'd
 and mann'd, and in so bad
 a State of Health, that he
 verily believes that next
 under God all their Lives
 are owing to the Captain's
 Vigilance and Conduct;
 and that if he (the Captain)
 had died, they should
 scarce have ever seen *En-*
gland again. *Richard Guy*
swears, much to the same
 Purpose, and almost in
 the

the same Words, as *Van Sobriek*. *Vid.* the *App.* p. 30. and seq. Mr. *Carew* says, in answer to *Query* the 20th. *Vid.* the *App.* p. 64. That the People were overjoy'd, to hear we were returning from our farthest, on account of their bad State of Health, and Hardships they underwent, on Board of both Ships. Indeed this last Evidence is general, but the many foregoing are particular enough to evince what Credit ought to be given to that of the Surgeon, one of the Crutches of Mr. *Dobbs's* lame Cause.

I quitted, says Mr. *Dobbs*, the Discovery, at *Wager-River* : I answer, No, I quitted the Discovery at *Brook-Cobham*. As to the Master's Evidence, of an open, bold Passage, be it remembered, that it is Mr. *Dobbs's* own Evidence, given in from his Minutes which he made of the Discourse he had with the Master ; as to the large and spacious Strait, leading away to the Southward of the West, the upper end of

of *Wager-River*, mentioned in the Lieutenant's additional Account ; I never had any Information of it, till I read Mr. *Dobbs's* Queries, and the Lieutenant's spacious Strait, &c. I was entirely a Stranger to, as much as I believe, that Officer himself (who in answer to *Query* 2. saw a great Opening to the Northward) till Mr. *Dobbs* wrote his *Remarks*.

As to the Lieutenant's Draught of the Cove at *Marble Island*, it is, I believe, a Dream of his, since he return'd to *England*, or an Invention to which he has been wise enough to lend his Name; for he owns himself, it was almost dark; how then could he discover an Opening? However, it makes against his Discovery of any Tide: For it is well known, that the Waters are stagnated in all Coves; consequently, his W. N. W. Tide, is a Fiction. Farther, the Mouth of this Cove, faces the S. E. wherefore instead of being in the
Cove,

Cove, and in stagnated Water, had he been at the Mouth or Entrance, to observe the Tides, he must have found them come in from the S. E. as the Entrance of the Cove lies. But 14 or 16 Points of the Compass Difference, is but a Trifle with Mr. *Dobbs* and *Rankin*, either in Tides or Bearings.

Mr. *Dobbs*, when he says, I allow Mr. *Rankin's* Opening, ought to point out the Place where I make this Concession. That the Surgeon saw an Opening as much as the Lieutenant, I readily grant; for, on my Conscience, I sincerely believe, neither the one nor the other, thought of such an Opening, till some Months after they returned from the Voyage; tho' Mr. *Dobbs*, has very gravely improved it to a short Passage to the Western *American* Ocean in the Draught he has published.

As to the Slavery I made my Men undergo, it was no more than what was necessary for the Service, and the greatest
Care

Care was taken of them, to alleviate their Fatigue, and to prevent any ill Consequences from the Cold; I have fully answer'd this, in the last Paragraph, p. 63. which I desire the Reader to peruse. But the Testimony of so many of my Men, with regard to my humane Treatment of them all, ought to be sufficient to screen me from this Imputation of Cruelty. As the cutting out of the Ships, was a Work of Necessity, I could not set them upon it, to frighten them from undertaking the same Voyage again, or to intimidate others from the relation of their Hardships.

Mr. *Dobbs*, gives up the Charge of discouraging my Lieutenant, &c. And says, I apprehended the Surgeon and Clerk keeping Journals: He might as well have said the Cook; nay, it was more probable I should, as very often a good Sailor is in that Post, who may make Observations of the Time they saw such and such Lands, or arrived

rived at such and such Ports. But the Master, in answer to *Query 5.* says, I never hindered any body from keeping what Account they would ; that I was ready to instruct any ; and shewed several how to keep Journals. In answer to *Query 20.* he says, both he himself, and the Lieutenant, had experienced the Benefit of my Instructions. *Towns* swears, he never heard I threatned to punish any Man, for offering his Mind with Freedom, about the Conduct used in the intended Discovery. *Van Sobriek* swears, I took Pains and Care to instruct the Ignorant. *Grant* swears, the same as *Towns*, and pretty near in the same Words. *Cooper* swears, that I never threatned to punish any Man, for speaking his Mind about the Discovery. *John Donaldson, Iverson, Monro, Gill,* all Men on board the *Furnace*, answer to *Query 10* ; and are ready to seal that Answer, with their Oaths, that I never threatned to take away any Books from any body ;

dy ; but on the contrary, encouraged every Person on Board. *Carew* never heard of any Threats. *Vide* his Answer to *Query* 17, *App.* p. 62. Now I think, this Readiness to instruct the Ignorant, (among whom were Mr. *Dobbs's* three Friends ; two of whom, wrote most of my Accounts during the Voyage, and had all my Keys and Papers in their Possession or Power) amounts to almost a Demonstration, that I could not have a Design to conceal the Passage.

The next Charge of my threatenning the Surgeon, with regard to his corresponding with the *Indians*, is ridiculous and absurd ; as every one, on board the Ship, knows that he was ignorant of their Language, and that they could not speak *English*. *Vid.* Answer to the 9th *Query*, by *Donaldson*, &c. p. 50. in the *Appendix* ; which flatly contradicts the Surgeon's Evidence.

Governor *Isham's* Letter, p. 14. in the *App.* mentions the Arrival of

one of these *Indians*. The Master of the *Furnace*, in answer to *Query* 18. says, the Boat was very well, and they might easily manage her. *Townswears*, they went voluntarily into a good, tight Boat; which he saw well caulk'd two Days before, as it was his Business, being Boatswain of the *Discovery*. *Grant* swears, they departed in a good, tight Boat, highly pleased with what I had given them. *Cooper* swears, they both seem'd highly pleased, and willing to depart; and they both went voluntarily into the Boat, which was a good tight one, without the least forcing. *Guy* swears, that after the *Indians* departed from the Ships, he was two Nights ashore with them, at *Marble Island*; saw them work their Boat with Oars and Sails, and that they had but two Leagues to the main Land. The Surgeon says, that they were set ashore, in a strange Place, which was in the Latitude of 63° : but both he, and the Clerk

the Clerk, tells us, *p.*
 147. of Mr. *Dobbs's*
Remarks, that about the
 Latitude of 63° , they
 seemed to have more
 Knowledge of the Land
 than in any other Part of
 our Discovery. Nay,
 they were so well ac-
 quainted about the Lati-
 tude 63° , that Messieurs
Thompson and *Wygate* say,
 that when we sailed to
 the North Eastward of
 that Latitude, the *In-*
dians told them, we were
 going from the Copper
 Mines. The Proverb
 says, that People of a
 certain Character, ought
 to have good Memories.
 My Apprehension of
 these *Indians* making a
 Discovery, had I brought
 them to *England*, is too
 ridiculous for Notice.
 I dare say, Mr. *Dobbs*
 himself, though he has
 made it a Charge against
 me, does not believe it:
 For allowing, that they
 could in a short Space of
 Time, be perfect in the
English, how could they
 discover a Passage of
 which they themselves
 are ignorant? Or, if they
 knew of such a Passage,
 direct

direct any other to find it, knowing nothing of *Geography*, &c. I am fully convinced that there is none; without it is so far to the North, that it is impracticable to come near it for incessant Ice. But I shall now, as I have fully answered this Head of Neglect, proceed to the third.

III.

The third Head of these Accusations, is laying down false Tides and fictitious Straits; to support the former of these 2 Heads, he says, *p. 35*, of his *Remarks*, That he was informed by me, that I left the Ship betwixt 9 and 10, and got ashore at 11, when (if I am to be believed) it was ebbing Water; though by his own Confession, it flowed till 1; for which I ask Pardon, and Leave to retract, but 'tis too material a Point to be given up. *P. 37*. Mr. *Dobbs* says, I argue against an Opening toward the Island between

III.

I acknowledge my Mistake; I said it was high Water just at Sunset, about 7, whereas the Sun at that Time, sat a little after 8; and that it was owing to a failure of Memory, is evident, from the Council held the 8th Day of *August*: Where 'tis said, Capt. *Middleton* went ashore in the Boat, and found it flowed 15 or 16 Foot, 3 Days after the Full, and a W. by S. Moon made high Water. Mr. *Dobbs* has often attempted, but no where proved this Head of Accusation, of my having lain down false Tides; and we may see, by

it and the Beach, because no Tide was observed there; which rather supports what he had said, and shews, that there was no Strait to cause a strong Tide. He then gives the Lieutenant's Observations, that at 10 in the Morning, a strong Tide forced the Ship to the Northward: Farther, the Boatmen told me, the Flood went to the Northward. Page 38. Mr. *Dobbs* charges me with a Fallacy, to impose upon the Public; that if the Tide flowed in 48^m, instead of 12^h 48^m.—P. 39. he says, he has not misrepresented the Affair of the Boats being carried out by the Ebb Current; that the Lieutenant said, expressly, before the Admiralty, that he was carried out by the Tide of Ebb, S. W. round Cape *Dobbs*; the Clerk says, that the Lieutenant, and Master, have often affirmed this for Truth, though the latter now prevaricates.—P. 40. the Lieutenant's Report of July the 27th, says, that at half an Hour after 4

by his catching at a Mistake of an Hour, as to the Tides flowing, how gladly he would support this Suggestion. I aver, and have the Testimony of all the Ship's Company, and the Evidence of Journals to prove, that I mis'd no proper Opportunity to try the Tides; and that I have laid them down, as we found them flow, as near as could be expected in so short a Time: But I maintain, it is impossible to be exact; and so far I may, notwithstanding my utmost Care, and my Endeavours to the best of my Knowledge, be said to have laid them down falsely. But Mr. *Dobbs* would have it thought, that I have disguised the Tides with a Design to conceal the Discovery, and possibly to mislead such as may hereafter attempt it. Wherefore, as he seems to labour this Point with indefatigable Pains, I shall endeavour to give particular Answers to all he alledges to prove his Position, and the frozen Straits,

in the Morning, on the 26th, they were driven out of *Wager River*, along the South Shore, and with the Tide of Flood sailed to the North Shore; which *Report* is manifestly against my Current and Tides of Flood, coming from the Northward.—He endeavours in the same, p. 40, 41. to bring the Tide of Flood from the S. W. round Cape *Dobbs*, and gives in the Evidence of the Lieutenant, Surgeon, and Clerk. He farther says, I was afraid of the Lieutenant's discovering the true Tide at the low Beach, and therefore recalled him before he could reach the Shore; however, he was near enough the Shore to plainly discover it was falling Water, and had ebb'd 2 Foot; tho' I have put it down flowing Water coming from the Eastward, notwithstanding a contrary Information from the Lieutenant, who by the Tide of Ebb, had lik'd to have been carried S. W. round the Beach Point.

In p. 42. he believed

Straits, being a meer Fiction. I shall however, take notice of such only, as he thinks most conducive to prove this Accusation, as it would be tedious to any Reader, to follow him through all his Repetitions, and altogether as useless, if I shew his Contradictions, and that he really don't understand what he argues upon.

I still in Answer to this Charge, insist upon it, that there was no Opening seen by any, that I ever heard of, till after we had been some Months in *England*: Had there been one, a strong Tide would have set thro' it, and we should have felt its Effects on either Ebb or Flood. As to the Lieut.'s Observations, Mr. *Dobbs*'s disingenuously conceals a Part, viz. When the Ship was forced to the Northward, (which indeed was to the Eastward, and the Clerk says, to the N. E. as does also the Lieutenant, in answer to *Query* the 11th) whether it was Ebb or Flood, he knew not? The Master in answer to the said *Query*, says, whilst

there was a South Westward Tide that flowed thro' the broken Lands and Islands between *Wager River* and *Whale Cove*, and flowed up the East Entrance of *Wager Strait*, until it met a contrary Tide, which probably may be somewhere above *Deer Sound*. P. 43. The Lieut. found the Tide flowed so strongly from the W. N. W. by Compass, that the Boatmen were up to the middle in Water, before they could get a Bear they killed, into the Boat; that this Tide, and an Opening, the Lieut. saw to the Westward, are very material Points of the Discovery, which I have taken no Notice of. — Mr. *Dobbs* farther says, in his *Remarks*, p. 45. that he allows a West Moon makes high Water; for the Lieutenant says, it was almost dark when the strong Tide came from the Westward, which was near 8 at Night. Now the Tide could not rise so fast, (until it had flowed at least an Hour and a half, or two Hours) as to rise whilst the Ship was working and driving, to stay for the Boat's coming on Board, she was hauled almost into the frozen Straits, upon the Ebb, and set from it on the Flood, tho' the Wind blew right off it. *Douglas*, &c. in their answer to *Query 5* say, they remember that Captain *Middleton* ordered the Lieutenant to make sail from the large Opening that we saw, which was the Mouth of the frozen Straits; the Tide of Ebb being made a little after 8 that Morning: And that they remember farther, that the Tide strong into the said Strait, which was all fast froze. See their Answer in the following *Appendix*, p. 45. Farther it is evident that it was an Ebb Tide by the Water being fallen, as I said in my *Vindication*, p. 29. 5 or 6 Foot when I landed at 11 o'clock. How does the Lieutenant's Ignorance of its being Ebb or Flood, or the Boatmen saying that the Flood went to the Northward,

|| Vide *Obediah Satchell's* Affidavit in the Appendix.

when

up to the Men's Waists, and as it was just then Quarter Moon, it was low Water about 6 at Night; so that a West Moon made high Water; and there the Lieutenant's whole Account seems agreeable to Reason and Truth.

when they were in a Cove surrounded with Land, and Pieces of Ice a-ground, where the Water was all stagnated, &c. prove that the Tide came from the N. E. and that it was flowing Water? Here is evident Proof from many Witnesses of a strong Tide; Mr. *Dobbs* himself allows it, and I think this demonstrates a Strait which gave it that Rapidity; had this frozen Strait been a Bay, or only imaginary, as he more than once asserts it, we could not have been sensible of any Tide at only 2 Leagues distance from it; nay even at 5 Leagues distance, the Water would have been stagnated as in *Repulse-Bay*. As farther Proof the Master says in Answer to the 7th Query, p. 165, *Vindication*, “ When
 “ we sailed out of the
 “ River *Wager*, we plied
 “ to the Eastward
 “ with Sails and Oars,
 “ to get out of the In-
 “ draft of the River's
 “ Flood from the East-
 “ ward, but not from
 “ the Southward”.——
Towns makes Oath
 “ that

Cove
d, and
ound,
as all
e that
the N.
owing
vident
itnes-
; Mr.
ws it,
emon-
gave
d this
Bay,
as he
rts it,
e been
ide at
stance
n at 5
the
been
epulse-
of the
wer to
165,
When
of the
e pli-
tward
Oars,
he In-
river's
East-
from
Oath
that

“ that he is certain of
“ his own Knowledge,
“ that all the Way from
“ the frozen Strait to
“ the River *Wager*, the
“ Tide of Flood came
“ from the Eastward”.

Vindication. Van Sobriek
swears, that the Flood
Tide which flows up the
River *Wager*, in at it's
Mouth, comes all from
the E. or E. by N. *Ibid.*
In the Lieutenant's Jour-
nal, given into the Navy
Office, he says, *August* the
4th, I several Times tried
the Tide, and found the
Flood came from the E.
and by N. near the Mid-
straits; and an E. Moon
makes a full Sea or high
Water, as well here, as in
the River's Mouth. In
the said Journal, *July*
the 5th, he has these
Words: “ The Tide
“ was tried several
“ Times, and found to
“ run 2 Miles an Hour
“ from the N. E. by E.
“ by Compass, the Day
“ before the full Moon,
“ and I take it to be the
“ Flood from the East-
“ ward”. In the same
Journal, *July* the 6th, he
says working along Shore,
M 4 the

the Flood from the N. E. by N. and the Ebb from the S. W. by S. — The Master's Journal on the same Day, is to the same Purport: I should according to the Dates of these Journals, have taken notice of the Lieutenant's, of the 5, 6, and 8th of *August*. On the first of these Days, he says, the Tide here (that is, in the Narrows of the New Straits) was very strong, with such Eddies and Whirlings, that the Ship would hardly steer; and the Flood comes from the E. by N. — On the 6th, lay too from 12 to one, for the Tender, try'd the Tide, found the Flood to come from the E. by S. — At 3 again he found the Tide of Flood to come from the Eastward, — *August* the 8th. The Lieutenant in his Journal says, we overlooked the *Frozen Strait*, and could see the Passage where the Flood came in, and the narrowest Part of this Strait is 4 or 5 Leagues, being 6 or 7 Leagues at the broadest, its Length about 16 or 18 Leagues.

The

The Masters Journal of the same Day says, from 12 to 1 tryed the Tide and found it to come from the E. N. E. tho' these differ 2 or 3 Points by the Inaccuracy of their respective Tryals, or the Tides being tryed in two different Boats, and two different Places, yet they both confirm the Flood-tide coming at the same time, from the Eastward. — The Master's Answer to Query 10, is in the following Words. "The Tide near the Head-land in Lat. $63^{\circ} 20'$ as we went Northward from *Churchill River* was tryed several times, and ran 2 Miles an Hour from the Eastward." — *Richard Guy* makes oath, that all the Flood-tides came from the *Frozen Straits* E. by N. the Course of the *New Straits* by Compass, that it was very strong, and ran 4 Knots off the Mouth of the *Frozen Strait*, and also in the Narrows of *New Straits*, vide p. 45 in the following Appendix. *Donalson, &c.* in Answer to Query the 4th
ibid.

ibid. say, that after we got out of the River *Wager*, we met the Flood-tide from the Eastward, where we discovered the *Frozen Straits*, and tried the Tide every Hour or 2 Hours with our current Logg, and remember the Master lost a Grappling, and that the Tide ran 4 Knots in the *New Straits*, of which they are ready and willing to make oath.—Mr. *Carew* also proves in his Answer to the *Queries* in the *Appendix*, p. 52. the Tides coming from the Eastward.—Governor *Kelsey* in his *Journal* 1720, takes Notice, that in Lat. 63°. North, on the West Side of the *Welcome*, the Tide comes from the N. E. which is near the Course of the *Welcome*; he calls it a soaking Tide, and says it flows neap and spring Tides from 12 to 17 Foot. *Vide Dobbs's* Remarks p. 116. —Mr. *Dobbs* in his Letter to me *Oct.* 20, 1742, expresses himself in the following Manner. “ All “ the fine Hopes formed “ from *Fox* and *Scroggs's* “ Ac-

" Account are quite va-
 " nish'd, nothing being
 " agreeable to their Jour-
 " nals, but the black
 " Whales you observed
 " near *Brook Cobham*,
 " and that the Tides
 " flow at the *Welcome*
 " from the N. E. agree
 " pretty much with *Fox's*
 " Account; since you
 " found a W. by N.
 " Moon made High-
 " Water in $63^{\circ}. 20'$. and
 " in $66^{\circ}. 40'$. an E. by S.
 " Moon made High
 " Water, which prove
 " that the Tide of
 " Flood proceeds from
 " $66^{\circ}. 40'$ to the *Wel-*
 " *come*; and *Brook Cob-*
 " *ham*, and not the Tide
 " from the Southward of
 " *Carey's Swans Nest*.

With regard to what
 Mr. *Dobbs* says in p. 45
 of his Remarks it hap-
 pens unluckily for him
 to have printed from the
 Waste Logg-book, which
 has put down the Tide
 from the East 3 Knots
 off of the East End of
Marble Island. *Thursday*
 the 12th of *August*, which
 was the Evening before
 the Lieutenant observed
 the

the Tide rose suddenly to the Men's Waists, and came from the Westward; the Moon was in her last Quarter on the 12th Day, so that it must be more than 2 Hours Flood at 8. On *Thursday* Evening on the 13th when we lay too off the East End of *Marble Island* to try the Tide, we found it to come from the East 3 Knots, as is mentioned in all Journals kept on board of the *Furnace*, as to the Tides being try'd, but the Strength of it, is not taken notice of, in either my Logg or Journal, tho' I find it in the Master's and the Waste Logg. Our Tryals of the Tides were not in Bays or Coves, where the Waters were stagnated or remain'd in Eddies, but in the fair Way 2 Leagues from the East End of the Island, where nothing could alter its Direction. Now *Mr. Dobbs* allowing it to be low Water at 6 at Night, confirms the Reality of the frozen Straits and all the Tides coming from the Eastward, which I not only before

before proved, from *Fox* and *Kelsey's* former Accounts, but by the Witnesses, before mentioned, and has moreover ruined, and brought to nothing his large specious Straits, and *Rankin's* Openings. For a farther Confirmation of the Flood* Tides coming from the Eastward at *Brook Cobham*, August 13 at 6 in the Evening, being just flood and almost calm, we anchored to stop Tide, and for the Boat, Wind at E. N. E. with our small Anchor; See Logg and Journal, in 24 Fathom Water: The Master in his Journal says the same, and farther, that the Tide sat from the Eastward, we were 6 or 7 Floods and Ebbs at Anchor off *Marble Island*, marked the Lead-line; when we first let go our Anchor, we had 24 Fathoms at Low Water, and $26 \frac{1}{4}$ at High Water. Every one that was upon Deck, must remember our Head pointed with the East End of the Island, which bore East on the

* For the Tide at *Marble Island*, see *Satchell's* Affidavit in the Appendix which has been made since these was composed.

Flood, and our Stern that way on the Ebb. I cannot impute this Concession to Mr. *Dobbs's* Impartiality, but to his Ignorance of Tides ; the Knowledge of which, must be the Basis of all Discoveries where any flow.—What I have said is sufficient to convince every rational judicious Man, that Mr. *Dobbs's* Western Tides from the Western *American* Ocean are pure Invention, wherefore I need not pursue this Head any farther, but proceed to the 4th, and demonstrate that the *Wager* is a fresh Water River and not a salt Water Strait.

IV.

His 4th Head taxes me with making the *Wager* a fresh Water River, instead of a salt Water Strait, this and the other foregoing Head of Accusations Mr. *Dobbs* charges me with in his Vindication to the Lords of the Admiralty, where he says I have forged a large frozen Strait to bring in the Tides and Whales, in Order to support the Scheme I had lain, to conceal the Passage. To make good this Assertion, he tells us p. 18, that

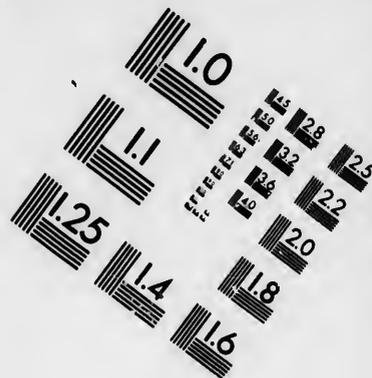
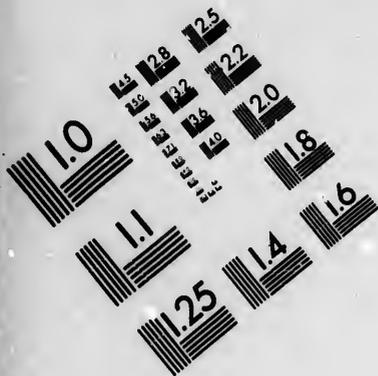
IV.

the Master of the *Furnace* informed him, the Water was as salt in the *Wager*, as any he had tasted in those Seas. Mr. *Dobbs* tells us p. 64 in the 2d Line, that the Lieutenant expressly said, the Water was salt, he filled three Bottles in different Places, not being a Judge himself, and brought them down to the Ship, and they were found all equally salt; farther the Master Mr. *Wilson* who was at the Place, is quite silent in this material Point, which Mr. *Dobbs* esteems a Conviction, that he knew the Water was salt; *Morrison*, *Armour* and *Rumble* sign the following Evidence, I am very sure the Water was as salt as could be, among so much Ice as was in the Straits at that Time, and such a Quantity of Snow as was melting up the High-land, and of this, they are ready to make Affidavit. *Vide* Page 156 and 157 of *Remarks*; in Page 153 *Remarks*, they say the Water was very salt. — Mr. *Moor* in Answer to

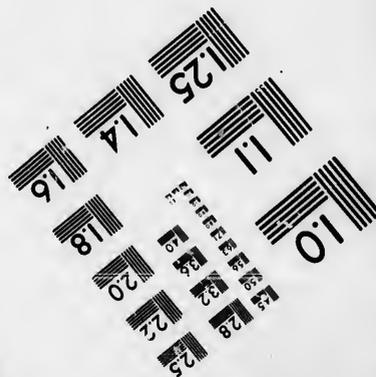
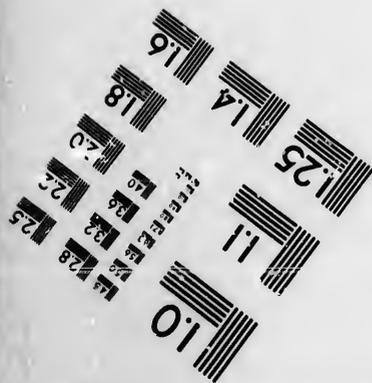
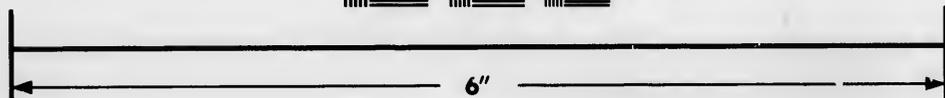
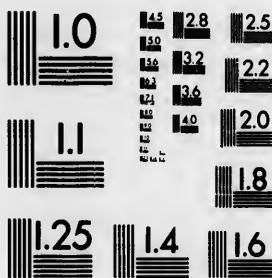
The Information of the Master of the *Furnace*, I must observe, is from Mr. *Dobbs*'s own Minutes, and as we shall immediately see, positively contradicted by him before the Lords of the Admiralty: The Lieutenant does not expressly say, The Water was salt in his Answer to Query 1, his Words are these, “the Water I *think* was salt;” but as I would not entirely depend upon my Own Judgment, I filled 3 Bottles with Water, (which indeed were but two) at 3 different Places, and was told they were all equally alike salt;” the Diffidence of this Gentleman, makes his Evidence a meer Chipp in Porridge, it is neither for nor against the Freshness of the Water; he depends upon the Opinion of Others; consequently he is but a hear-say Witness, and the Opinion of others which he reports of the Bottles being equally salt, shews they were equally fresh. Master *Wilson* is so far from being silent as to

Query





**IMAGE EVALUATION
TEST TARGET (MT-3)**



**Photographic
Sciences
Corporation**

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503

1.5 1.8
1.8 2.0
2.0 2.2
2.2 2.5
2.5 2.8
2.8 3.2
3.2 3.6
3.6 4.0
4.0 4.5

1.5 1.8
1.8 2.0
2.0 2.2
2.2 2.5
2.5 2.8
2.8 3.2
3.2 3.6
3.6 4.0
4.0 4.5

Query 13, p. 169 *ibid.* says, I was present when the Lieutenant of the *Furnace* brought the 3 Bottles of Water down the River; Capt. *Middleton* gave it in as his Opinion, that the Bottles taken the highest up was the saltest; this is, I think, all the Evidence Mr. *Dobbs* has brought to prove the Saltness of the Water in the *Wager*.

the Freshness of the Water, that in Answer to Query 1, he says that above *Deer Sound* the Water was much fresher, and the higher up, the fresher still. The Declaration of *Morrison, &c.* Page 156, 157 of Remarks; allows the Freshness of the Water, tho' they are not willing to speak out, but attribute it to the Quantity of Ice and melting Snow; this is evident from the Words "the Water was salt as could be, among so much Ice, &c." The Place where *Morrison, &c.* tasted the Water is not specified, if it was below *Deer Sound*; I do not pretend that the Water was fresh, whether there was Ice or not; it must then be above *Deer Sound*, or it would not be any thing to the Purpose, and in such Case the great Quantity of Ice, which Mr. *Dobbs* supposes freshn'd the Water, is contradicted by the Lieutenant's Answer to Query 1 p. 156 of my Vindication: He says there was no Ice to interrupt our Passage, from the time we left the
Head-

Head-land above *Deer Sound*, till we came to the utmost Part of our Voyage up the River on the West Side of the Channel: Now if there was not Ice to interrupt the Lieutenant's Passage, can it be supposed that what Ice there was could be a sufficient Quantity, to freshen in any Degree, the Waters of the *Wager*, where we could find no Bottom with a Line of 68 Fathoms, and which by the Report of these very Men, *Morrison*, &c. was 11 or 12 Leagues broad; but these very Witnesses contradict themselves as to the Quantity of Ice; for in Page 153 of Remarks, they assert there was not one Piece of Ice to be seen above the high *Bluff Point*, to the highest we went up. In Answer to the positive Assertion of the 3 Witnesses, *Morrison*, &c. of the Water being very salt, I aver that one of them, *Armount*, was lame on board, and was never up as far as the high *Bluff*; and to contradict the other two, I shall give in the Evidence of Men, at least equally credible

credible. If the Water they found so very salt, was taken up above *Deer Sound*, but by the S. E. Bearing by Compass, it is evident they tasted the Water not far above the Entrance of the River *Wager's* Mouth, if they tasted it at all, for this Bearing brings them pretty near the Mouth of the River, and on the East Side. What Mr. *Moor* says I declared on tasting the Water is absolutely false. — *Van So- brick* swears that he, and the rest of the Hands in the Boat did drink the Water in the mid Chan- nel and found it to be just brackish, so that it might very well be drunk. *Vide* my Vindication p. 84. *Price* attests that he and several others of the Boat's Crew, tasted it and drank the Water in the Middle of *Wa- ger River*, and found it but just brackish, yet almost as salt at *Savage Sound* where the Ships lay, as in the Sea, of which he is ready and willing to make oath. *Vide* Appendix p. 28. — “ *Guy* makes oath that “ the

" the River runs but little
 " higher up than where
 " he was (after a Herd
 " of Deer) and towards
 " the Northward; not
 " only from the little
 " Water, we found it
 " flowed the highest we
 " could go, which was
 " not above 5 or 6 Foot,
 " but that the Water was
 " so fresh all the way,
 " from 3 or 4 Leagues
 " above *Deer Sound*,
 " that the Men drank it
 " alongside, and boiled
 " their Venison, and made
 " Broth, and drank of it.
 " My Opinion is, that
 " the Freshness of the
 " Water could not be
 " caused by melted Snow
 " and the Ice from the
 " Mountains; if so, the
 " lower Parts of the Ri-
 " ver, or nearer to its
 " Entrance, as also the
 " *Welcome*, the *New*
 " *Straits* and *Repulse Bay*,
 " would have been fresh,
 " or but brackish, from
 " the far greater Quan-
 " tities of Ice and Snow,
 " from the vast Number
 " of Waterfalls which
 " empty themselves in
 " there, which on the con-
 " trary we found as salt as
 " the Ocean."

A few glaring Instances of Inconsistencies,
Contradictions and Disengenuity.

Page 3 of Remarks, Mr. *Dobbs* did not entice Capt. *Middleton*, but he on the contrary pressed Mr. *Dobbs* to get him employed.

Page 8 Mr. *Dobbs* says, recollecting that I had read in the Transactions of the Royal Society some Remarks upon the Variation of the Needle, &c. in *Hudson's Bay* communicated by one Capt. *Middleton*, who commanded one of their Ships, it naturally occurred to me, that he would be a proper Person to be acquainted with, therefore he desired Mr. *Allan* a Merchant in the City, to enquire where Capt. *Middleton* might be found, and finding the Coffee-House he frequented was in *Thames Street*, near *Billinggate*, he went thither with Mr. *Allan* to meet him (the Captain) at the said Coffee-House.

Page 14. Mr. *Wigate* and *Thompson* gave Mr. *Dobbs* an Account by an Anonymous Letter, that the Public had been grossly imposed upon; — Page 15. On

Mr. *Dobbs* says, p.74. that these very Persons were very unwilling to criminate their Captain, and could not have been brought to do it, if the concealing the Discovery
Mr.

Mr. *Dobbs* coming to *London*, he writ a Note to the above two Persons, on which they appointed him a meeting, and convinced him that the Captain had falsified his Chart, Currents, &c.— P. 19. *Wygate* endeavours to gain over the Master of the *Furnace* to sign some Paper.— Page 138 the Master swears that both these Witnesses of Mr. *Dobbs* offered him the Command Captain *Middleton* had the last Voyage, that he the Master, was the only Person they wanted to compleat a certain Purpose, that he must go along with them directly to Mr. *Dobbs*, which he did, and was by him importuned to set down some Particulars in Writing relating to the late Voyage, that two Days after *Wygate* and *Thompson* came to him again on the same Errand, but on his refusing to answer *Wygate's* Questions suspecting some wicked Purpose, the said *Thompson* hinted that the Deponent ought to be well

in so flagrant a Manner had not been to the greatest Prejudice of the Public. Page 21, Mr. *Dobbs* acknowledges his having enquired after the proper Persons who knew most, and I must allow he met with them in the Lieutenant, *Wygate* and *Thompson*, who have made it appear, they knew more than I did myself, the rest of the two Ship's Companies, or will ever be discovered by any other hereafter. For they are sure of a Passage to the Western *American* Ocean. *Vide* their Letter of Mr. *Dobbs's* Remarks, p. 132.

assured

assured of what he was to get by his Evidence ; farther, *Thompson* and *Wygate* came to the said Master at a House near the new Crane ; and told him they had been every where seeking him ; that upon the Deponent's answering he did not like the Scheme, *Thompson* swore and raved, and menaced him the Deponent with Ruin, as well as *Capt. Middleton*; indeed throughout *Mr. Dobbs's* Remarks, in their Answers and Affidavit, p. 148 of *Mr. Dobbs's* Appendix to his Remarks, they shew themselves very active and willing Witnesses : In the beginning of the said Deposition, they make Oath that neither of them have any personal Antipathy, private Animosity, or are any ways affected with Partiality upon any Account whatever against *Christopher Middleton* late Commander of his Majesty's Sloop *Furnace*, &c.

Mr. Dewilde, in Page 39 of the Appendix to these Sheets, gives in Evidence, that *Wygate* threatned to beat *Mr. James Smith* for telling *Capt. Middleton* what they (*Mr. Dobbs*, *Mr. Wygate* and *Thompson*, as I suppose) were about, and said

said that Capt. *Middleton* deserved to be cut into Pound Pieces.—*Macbeth* (p. 140 *Vindication*) has made Oath that *Wigate* and *Thompson* had in the Space of 3 Months last past, been often at that Deponent's House ; and have there in his Hearing boasted they would do Capt. *Middleton*'s Business, get him broke, and take Care, that he the said Capt. *Middleton* should never Command another of the King's Ships ; with many other, the like ill-natured Expressions ; he farther swears that in his Hearing, the said *Wigate* had frequently said he might be made a Purser of one of his Majesty's Ships whenever he pleased, that he shewed several Letters, and affirmed that he had received them from one Mr. *Arthur Dobbs* in *Ireland*, containing Promises to reward the said *Wigate* to his Hearr's Content, provided he would draw up something in the Nature of an Accusation against the said Capt. *Middleton*, &c.

Mr. *Dobbs*, in p. 39 of his Remarks says, I charged him with misrepresenting the Affair of the Boats being carried out of the River *Wager* by the Ebb Current. I said before, p. 49, that I continued that Charge, and will now, as I there promised, make appear by a plain Narrative, that I am well grounded.

Mr. *Dobbs* tells us, the Lieutenant expressly said before the Admiralty, that he was carried out by the Tide of the Ebb close by the Rocks, 4 or 5 Leagues out of the River, S. W. round *Cape Dobbs*; and that Officer says the same in his written Answer; and brings the Surgeon and Clerk, with his own Minutes to prove what the Master said, but for all this, we have only his own Word.

The Lieutenant's Answer to the 6th *Query* before the Admiralty, is as follows.

“ Yes we were carried to the South Westward
 “ nigh the Rocks, on the South Shore of *Cape*
 “ *Dobbs*, by the Tide of Ebb, and drove from
 “ *Wager River* 6 or 7 Leagues.”

Master's Answer to the same *Query*.

“ When we were drove out of the River *Wager's*
 “ Mouth by the Rapidity of the Ebb Tide, upon a
 “ large Piece of Ice, we were carried S. E. by S. as
 “ the Course of the Land lies by Compass from the
 “ River's Mouth towards *Cape Dobbs*, until we met
 “ the Channel Ebb from the W. by S. by Compass.”
 In the Lieutenant's Report, the 27th of *July*, he
 says, as may be seen in this Appendix, p. 23. “ We
 “ were forced upon the South Shore with great
 “ Swiftnes, and many Picces of Ice were forced
 “ upon the Rocks, and others against them with
 “ great force. We were forced again off, near the
 Middle

“ Middle of the River, and carried out of the
 “ River's Mouth with the Tide of Ebb, above 5
 “ Leagues before we could see the least Opening
 “ among the Ice, to get the Boat out; about 4 or 5
 “ in the Morning. The 26th the Ice opened a little”.

Now is there any thing like being carried round
Cape Dobbs? Close by the Rocks was in *Wager*
River; and from the Mouth of the River to *Cape*
Dobbs was on the South Shore of that *Cape*. *Vide*
 the Report in p. 23 of this Appendix; whence 'tis
 plain they never came nigh any Rocks after they got
 out of the River, or were they above 2 or 3
 Leagues out of the River; it's my Opinion from
 the Observation I made in going out with the Ships,
 and twice I was down with the Boat, I found the
 Tide very strong from three Leagues within, to one
 without its Mouth, to set S. E. by S. and N. W.
 by N. as the Course of the River below lieth. We
 past by the lower Islands, just at high Water, about
 2 Leagues within its Entrance, and rowed with the
 Ships Oars, and the eight oared Boat ahead, yet we
 could not get above 3 or 4 Leagues without the
 River's Mouth, though spring Tides and the help
 of rowing and towing. Now let us observe how
 the Boat could be carried round *Cape Dobbs* in one
 Tide. It was 10 in the Morning, *July* the 25th,
 the Lieutenant and Master went from the Ship down
 the River with the Ebb, and came up the next Flood;
 and got up within 4 or 5 Miles of the Ships, in *Sa-*
vage Cove (see the Report) and met the Tide of Ebb
 so strong against them, and the Ice, that they could
 not prevent being carried down with the Tide and
 Ice again: Before the Tide could be made so strong,
 it must be a quarter Ebb, so that they could not have
 above five Hours Ebb at most; and admit it had run
 all the Way, and time, 5 Miles an Hour, that
 would have been but 25 Miles that they could have
 been carried that Tide, if they had never endea-
 voured

voured at all to have rowed against the Ebb, before they were jammed up in Ice. Again, as it was 8 Leagues from where the Ships lay in *Savage Cove* to the River's Mouth, which are 24 Miles, and 3 Miles they were short of the Ships, when the Tide took them, that makes 19 Miles they had to drive, before they got out of the River; take 19, from 25, and it makes them but 2 Leagues without the River; and *Cape Dobbs*, is 8 or 9 Leagues from the River, they must consequently be 6 or 7 Leagues short of that *Cape*. But this Account of Mr. *Dobbs* agrees very well with all Mr. *Ranking's* other Bearings and Distances; making *Wager* 12 or 13 Leagues broad, at *Deer Sound*, in one Report, and 6 or 7 in another; and S. by E. Bearings, instead of W. by S. his Opening, and a bluff Point.

These few apparent Inconsistencies and flat Contradictions, are sufficient to shew with what View Mr. *Dobbs* wrote; and what Regard his Witnesses have for the Truth of what they advance and seal with their Oaths. I could point out a Number more, but they are too obvious to escape the Notice of the Reader.

L O G G - B O O K .

What Mr. *Dobbs* calls an Extract from the Logg-Book, p. 127 of his Remarks, is, perhaps, as disingenuous a Piece as ever was endeavoured to be palmed upon the Public; since it is evident that it is patched up from the said Logg, my Journal, and my printed Logg, with some little Invention. (Proof of this). There is no Latitude set down in the MS Waste Logg Book, in that Part where Mr. *Dobb's* has printed the Latitude, which he has taken from my printed Logg.

On the 9th Day of *August*, at eight in the Afternoon, he has set down the Opening S. W. by W. 2 Leagues

2 Leagues (which Opening, by the by, was the Opening of the frozen Straits) this Bearing is, indeed, in his Waste or Logg-Book; but it was so set down by Mistake, or has been altered, for it should have been E. S. E.

Note, Mr. *Dobbs* in his Extract, his 10th Day at 2 in the Afternoon, the Mouth of the River *Wager* bore N. W. $\frac{3}{4}$ N. Distance 8 or 9 Leagues, in the Waste or Logg-book the Bearing is the same; but the Distance is only 6 or 7 Leagues. This additional League or two, is to set us farther off the Shore, which he taxes me with not having searched. At 4 the same Afternoon, *Cape Dobbs*, by the Waste or Logg-book, bore N. W. $\frac{1}{4}$ N. but in the Extract Mr. *Dobbs* has made it N. W. $\frac{3}{4}$ W. Distance 6 Leagues. This Bearing was a Mistake in the copying my Logg from the Waste-book, and the same Mistake is in my Journal. Now Mr. *Dobbs* found this make more for his Purpose than the true Bearing in the Waste or Logg-book, and has therefore copy'd it into his pretended Extract of the Waste or Logg-book, as it sets us several Miles farther from the Land, and 7 or 8 Miles more to the Northward; to make out that we could not see *Cape Fullerton* and *Cape Dobbs* at one View, by Day-light. The same Day he has put down the Latitude observed at Noon $64^{\circ} 10'$ from my Pocket Logg-book, as he calls it, and there is no Latitude at that time in the Logg, from which he pretends this an Extract. The 12th at Noon from my Logg-Book, he has, in his pretended Extract, set down the Latitude $63^{\circ} 56'$; this is not in the Logg-book, from which he says he has made this Extract. At 6 in the Afternoon his Extract says, saw the Land all along the N. Shore, distant from it 7 or 8 Leagues. I own this Distance of 7 or 8 Leagues is set down in the Manuscript Waste or Logg-book, but the Alteration from 2 or 3 to 7 or 8 is manifest; for the Fi-

gure

gure 2 is plainly to be perceived between *seven* and the disjunctive *or*, and the Figure of 3 is turned into an *eight*. Who has been guilty of this clumsy Forgery, I wont take upon me to say; but Mr. *Dobbs* had this Book some Months in his Custody. This is a material Alteration in Favour of that Gentleman's Cause, as it is the very Place where it was resolved in Council to begin our Search. The 13th at Noon, his Extract shews the Latitude $63^{\circ} 14'$; this is not in the Waste Logg-book, but taken from my printed Logg. The same Day at Noon, another Head-land, at the same time bears S. W. by S. in his Extract; it should be W. by S. but this may be an Error of the Press, as it makes neither for him nor against me.

Mr. *Dobbs* says there is a material Difference betwixt the Folio Logg-book in the *Furnace*, which is indeed the Waste-book, and the Pocket Logg-book which the Captain has published. And I say here is a very material Difference between his pretended Extract, and the Truth in several Articles. How much to Mr. *Dobbs's* Credit, I leave the World to judge.

A TIDE-TABLE, shewing the Time of High-water, when the Moon is at Full and Change, how many Feet the Water Riseth and Falleth at a Spring-Tide, and how the Tide of Flood and Tide of Ebb setteth, beginning at London-Bridge, and so continuing to the Northward to the Islands of Orkney and Shetland.

Note that *H* stands for Hours, *M* for Minutes, and *F* for Feet.

	H.	M.	F.
L <i>London Bridge</i> south west	3	00	18
<i>Gravesend</i> south south west	2	30	20
<i>Buoy of the Nore</i> south half west	12	15	
<i>Sboo-Beacon</i> south	12		
<i>Buoy of the Middle</i> south	12		
<i>Buoy of the Gunsfleet</i> south	12		
<i>Harwich Harbour</i> south	12		
<i>Handford water</i> south	12	00	16
<i>Woodbridge-Haven</i> south half east	11	45	14
<i>Albrough-Haven</i> south half east	11	45	10
<i>Orfordness</i> south by east	11	45	
<i>Sole-Dunwich</i> and <i>Walters-wick</i> south south east	10	30	7
<i>Lastiff</i> south south east quarter Tide	10	30	7
<i>Yarmouth-Haven</i> south east and by south quarter Tide, that is, the Tide of Flood runneth to the southward one hour and half after it is High-water in the Peer. The same at <i>Lastiff</i> and the <i>Standford</i>	10	15	6
<i>Gallaper-Sand</i> south. The Tide runs over it south west by west, and north east by east three or four Leagues a Watch	12	00	16
<i>Gabard-Sand</i> south	12	00	15
			At

At the <i>Maze</i> south south west: but the Tide runneth in one Hour and a half after it is High-water; so that a slack Water is a quarter Ebb. The Tide of Flood runneth three Hours in the <i>Offin</i> to the Northward, after it is High-water on the <i>Maze</i> , which is Half-tide.	2	15	7
<i>Winterton-Nefs</i> south east. But the Flood runneth into the <i>Nefs</i> three hours after it is High-water, which is Half-tide	9		
<i>Cromer</i> and <i>Blakeney</i> south east	9	00	10
From <i>Blakeney</i> to <i>Flambrough-head</i> the Flood setteth south east, and the Ebb north west			
<i>Spurne</i> east by north	5	15	16
<i>Hull</i> east and west	6	00	16
<i>Burlington-Peer</i> east north east	4	30	13
<i>Scarborough</i> east north east	4	30	13
<i>Robinhood-Bay</i> , <i>White Bay</i> , <i>Teafe</i> and <i>Hartley-Pool</i> north east by east	3	45	
<i>Sunderland</i> north east	3	00	10
<i>Tinmouth-Bar</i> , and <i>North</i> and <i>South-Sields</i> , north east	3	00	13
From <i>Tinmouth-Bar</i> to <i>Flambrough-head</i> the Flood setteth south west, and south west by south, and the Ebb to the contrary.			
<i>Seaton-Sluce</i> north east and by north	2	45	10
<i>Blythe</i> north east by north	2	45	10
<i>Cocket-Island</i> south west by south	2	45	15
<i>Holly-Island</i> south west by south	2	45	15
<i>Barwick</i> south west by south	2	45	18
<i>Leith</i> , and all the <i>Peers</i> in <i>Edinburgb-Fritb</i>	2	45	14

	H.	M.	F.
St. Andrews and Dundee south west by south	2	45	
Montros south west by south	2	45	
Aberdeen south by west	0	45	
Buckaness, Peter-head, and Ratter-head south	12		
Peniland Firth south	12	00	
South Ronaldshaw south east by south	09	45	
Cromerty and Inverness south by east	11	45	16
Isles of Orkney south east by south	9	45	12
Sheland south east and by south	9	45	8

The above Table is taken from Capt. *Greenville Collins*, Hydrographer to King *William*; and which is confirmed by my own Experience.

Before I dismiss the Subject of the Tides, I must begg leave to evince, by Mr. *Dobb's* Letter, p. 9 in the *Appendix*, that all his Parade of Knowledge, on this head, is no more than so much Dust raised.

He says in that Letter, my Observations of the Height and Direction of the Tides, is directly contrary to the Account given by *Fox*, and in some Measure confirmed by the MS Journal of *Scroggs*; except that the time of the Tides flowing at the *Welcome*, from the N. E. agrees pretty much with *Fox's* Account. This flowing at the *Welcome from the N. E.* wants a little Explanation; for I own I cannot understand it. For if it flows from the N. E. it is the Direction of the Tide, which I will suppose is his Meaning; and this does agree with *Fox's* Observation, which as well as mine destroys his S. W. Tide, which he has so often laboured to introduce. And his Reason for this is, my having found a W. or W. by N. Moon, made high Water, in $63^{\circ} 20'$; and in $66^{\circ} 40'$ an E. by S. Moon made high Water, which proves that the Tide of Flood proceeds from

from $66^{\circ} 40'$, to the *Welcome*, and *Brook Cobbam*, and not the Tide from the Southward of *Carey's Swans-Nest*.

I should be glad Mr. *Dobbs* would be so communicative, as to inform the Public of his Method of proving the above Position, if it is the same with that in p. 38. of his Remarks; where he lays it down as an Axiom, that if a S. Moon makes high Water, a N. Moon, the opposite Point does so too; of which he tells us every one is sensible, who knows any thing of Tides. I cannot allow this Postulatum, for according to it, as the Distance between these two Places before mentioned, the one $63^{\circ} 20'$, and the other $66^{\circ} 40'$, is about 280 Miles upon the *Rhumb*; it would make 16 Points, or 12 Hours, 24 Minutes in time, difference of flowing; and I have already proved, that it is high Water at both Places, at the same Instant of time, allowing 4 Minutes for every Degree of Longitude they differ; and at the Eastmost Place, it is sooner high Water by as many 4 Minutes as their Meridians differ Degrees, if a thousand Leagues asunder; provided it flows upon the same Point of the Compass.

A P P E N D I X.



Da
too
I
wo
hap
ther
bab
me
app
were



APPENDIX.

LETTERS, &c.

DUBLIN, December 23, 1735.

S I R,

 Hope this will meet you in *London* safe after your Return from *Churchill River*, in *Hudson's Bay*. I was in hopes to have met you at the *Union* Coffee-house the Day you left *London*, but was a Quarter of an Hour too late.

I would esteem it as a particular Favour if you would let me know whether any thing Remarkable happened whilst you were in *Hudson's Bay*, or whether you made any farther Enquiry, about the Probability of a Passage near *ne Ultra*. Sir *Bibye Lake* told me little or nothing could be done whilst a War was apprehended with *France*, because all their Thoughts were taken up in erecting a Stone Fort in *Churchill*
A
River,

River, but as soon as Hands could be spared, proper Instructions should be given to renew the Attempt, by Sloops from thence, early in the Season, which would be done at a small Expence, since the Apprehensions of a War are now pretty well over. I hope no Danger is to be apprehended of any Attack by the *French* in *Hudson's Bay*, so that they may have spare Hands next Season to proceed upon the Discovery from *Churchill River*, which I shall again apply for, if you be so good as to let me hear from you, how you found every Thing upon your Arrival there, and whether the Situation of Affairs be such as it may be proper to give Instructions next Season to prosecute the Discovery in Sloops from thence. I shall trouble you no farther, but wish you Success in all your Affairs. I am, with Truth and Esteem,

Please to direct for me,
at the Surveyor
General's Office,
Dublin.

S I R,

Your most obedient Servant,

Arthur Dobbs.

S I R,

London, May 27, 1741.

S I R,

I Have shipped on Board his Majesty's Ship the *Furnace*, whereof you are Captain, Two small Bales of Goods marked S S *Stores*; the one with *Haberdasher's Wares*, &c. and the other with five Pieces of Coarse Woolen Goods, under the Care of my Brother *James Smith*, who you are so kind as to take on board your Ship: As he is young, and consequently wants Experience, I beg the Favour you'll give him your Advice and Direction in the Disposal of those Goods, and in receiving Skins for Returns, which I shall always acknowledge as a particular Favour. I need not recommend my Brother to your Protection and Care; because I am convinced my Friend *Mr. Dobbs's* Recommendation is sufficient. When you can Advance him I don't doubt but you will do it. I wish you a happy Voyage, and Success in your Discovery with all my Soul, because it must do great Honour to your Self, and be of the greatest Advantage to this Kingdom. I shall be very glad to hear from you from time to time as Opportunities may offer, for I am with Truth and Esteem,

S I R,

Your most obedient humble Servant,

Samuel Smith.

If you'll please to Favour me with a Letter, direct for me in *Iron-monger Lane*, where I have my *Counting-House*.

Hudson's-Bay-House, London,

May 27, 1741.

S I R,

Herewith inclosed, pursuant to the Desire of the Lords of the Admiralty, you receive a Copy of the Orders sent by the Governor and Committee of the *Hudson's-Bay Company*, to their Chief and Council at Prince of *Wales's Fort*, *Churchill River*, North *America*; That in Case Captain *Middleton* (who is going abroad in the Government's Service, to discover a Passage to the North-west) should, by inevitable Necessity be brought into real Distress and Danger of his Life, or the Loss of his Majesty's Ships under his Command, and by that Means forced to the said Fort, To give him the best Assistance and Relief they can, a Duplicate of which has been delivered to Captain *Middleton*: The Governor and Committee humbly crave Leave to represent to their Lordships, that in Case Captain *Middleton* should by any Means be detained or hindered from Entering the *Straits* early enough, to pursue the intended Expedition of a Discovery before the End of the Year, or that by any other Cause whatever (except by reason of the Distress before mentioned) he be inclined to Sail to and Winter in any of the Company's Factories; The Governor and Company apprehend the same will be the Destruction of their Trade and Factories, and will occasion the Natives to go and Trade with the *French*, who are very Watchful, and let no Opportunity slip of drawing and enticing the Natives away, and hindering them from Trading at the Company's Factories, and thereby the Company will run the utmost Hazard of losing their Trade, which if once lost, or a Distaste or Affront be given to the Natives, it will be with great Difficulty, if
 ever

ever regained; Wherefore the Governor and Committee humbly hope their Lordships will be pleased to give their Orders strictly commanding and forbidding the said Captain *Middleton*, That upon no Account whatever (except in Case of the before-mentioned Distress) he do attempt to come into any of the Company's Harbours, or Winter at any of their Factories; and that he be restrained from interfering in their Trade, and invading the Property, Rights, and Privileges, granted to the Company by Letters Patents by his late Majesty King *Charles* the Second Anno 1670, and possessed by the Company ever since, and that he be directed and enjoined not to give any Disturbance, Lett, Hindrance, or Molestation, to any of the Ships, or Sloops employed in their Service, or infringe their Liberties by Trading with any of the Natives, or Settling on any of the Lands or Territories granted to the Company by the aforesaid Letters Patents, or be permitted to Sail after he Enters the Bay to the Southward of *Cape Diggs*, in the Latitude of 62° 45' which the Company hope and pray their Lordships will readily Grant, in Regard there can be no Pretence of even supposing a Passage that Way, and consequently cannot in the least obstruct Captain *Middleton's* Expedition, if it be only for to find a North-west Passage to the *South Sea* and *Japan*. The Company notwithstanding the great Losses they have sustained from time to time by the *French*, to the Amount of above One hundred thousand Pounds, have, with great Cost and Charges, supported the Trade, and with Care and Industry, endeavoured to preserve, secure, and increase the same to the Benefit of this Kingdom, whereby his Majesty's Customs have been advanced, and Beaver Wool reduced to such a moderate Price, that many Thousands of his Majesty's Subjects are thereby employed in the Hatting Trade.

The Company have also expended large Sums of Money in Building Forts and Factories, and likewise Ships and Sloops, not only for carrying on the Trade, but also for making further Discoveries; two Ships whereof with all the Officers and Sailors that went from *Great-Britain Anno 1719*, on a Discovery of a North-west Passage were lost, not having been heard of since; the whole Charge of the Outsett of the said two Ships amounted to upwards of 2500*l.* and was entirely borne and paid for by the Company: And several Sloops before and since have been employed by the Company, and proceeded on such Discovery to 65 Degrees North Latitude on the Western Coast to the Bottom of *Sir Thomas Roe's Wellcome*, and no Passage being there, they returned without Success.

The Governor and Committee think it would be very hard for the Company to be dispossessed of any Part of their Trade, or prejudiced in their Property, all which is humbly submitted to their Lordships Consideration and Favour.

*By Order of the Governor and Committee of
the Hudson's-Bay Company.*

Thomas Burrows, *Secretary.*

To Thomas Corbett, *Esq;*
at the Admiralty Office,

S I R,

Hudson's Bay-House, May 30, 1741.

S I R,

I AM favoured with a Letter from you, dated the 29th Instant, wherein their Lordships desire there may be some Alteration made to the Order sent by the Company to the Chief and Council at Prince of *Wales's* Fort, and that the same Order may be extended to their several Settlements. The Company in their Letter to you of the 13th Instant desired you to inform their Lordships of the Impossibility they were under of making Provision for so great a Number of Persons as are intended to go with Capt. *Middleton*, and now beg you would assure their Lordships that they are far on their Parts from designing to give any wilful Opposition or Hinderance to the Discovery intended to be made by the said Captain: Yet, they cannot but apprehend the Danger and ill Consequences that may attend the Company if Capt. *Middleton* should Winter at any of their Settlements. But in Obedience to their Lordships Desire, The Company have herein enclosed sent Orders for Capt. *Middleton* to the Chiefs of their several Factories, that if the said Captain should be obliged to resort to them for Assistance, he shall have the best the Company can give him.

By Order of the Governor and Committee

of the *Hudson's Bay* Company.

Tho. Burrows, Secretary.

To *Thomas Corbett* Esq;
at the Admiralty.

A 4

Mr.

Hudson's Bay-House, London
May 30, 1741.

Mr. *James Isham* and
 Council at Prince of
Wales's Fort Churchbill-
River.

GENTLEMEN,

NOtwithstanding our former Orders to you, if
 Capt. *Middleton* (who is sent abroad in the
 Government's Service to discover a Passage to the
 Northwest) should be obliged to resort to you, you
 are to give him the best Assistance in your Power.

We remain

Your loving Friends,

Bibye Lake, Governor.
Benj. Pitt, Dep. Govern.
William Elderton.
J. Winter.
At. Lake.
John Anth. Mc Earle.

To Mr. *James Isham* and Council at Prince of *Wales's*
Fort Churchbill River.
 To Mr. *James Duffield* and Council at *Moose River*
 Fort.
 To Mr. *Thomas White* and Council at *York Fort.*
 To Mr. *Joseph Isbester* and Council at *Albany Fort.*

Mr.

Mr. *Dobbs's* Letter to me,

Dear S I R,

I HAD the Favour of yours from *Churchill* by Capt. *Spurrel*, and also your last from the *Orkneys*, and the Duplicate from *London*, and congratulate you upon your safe Arrival with the Ships after so dangerous a Voyage; but 'tis with Concern I find we have been disappointed of our Hopes of an easy Passage from the *Welcome* or *Whalebone Point*, as we had Reason to have expected, had the Account been true, which *Fox* laid down in his Journal, and which had been in some Measure confirmed by *Scroggs*, from his Manuscript Journal; but as your Observation of the Height and Direction of the Tides there, and Quantity of Ice, is directly contrary to their Account; all the fine Hopes formed from their Accounts are quite vanished, nothing being agreeable to their Journals, but the black Whales you observed near *Brook Cobham*, and that the Time of the Tides flowing at the *Welcome* from the N. E. agrees pretty much with *Fox's* Account; since you found a W. or W. by N. Moon made High Water in $63^{\circ} 20'$. and in $66^{\circ} 40'$. an E. by S. Moon made High Water, which proves that the Tide of Flood proceeds from $66^{\circ} 40'$. to the *Welcome* and *Brook Cobham*, and not the Tide from the Southward of *Carey's Swan's Nest*.

Until I see your Journal at large, and your Draught, I cannot fix with myself, whether the Lands on your Starbord or Eastward from the *Weligvie* to *Cape Hope*, were contiguous or broke into Islands; nor do I know whether the great Tide which flowed up *Wager River* between *Cape Dobbs* and *Whalebone Point* came from the Eastward thro' such Broken Lands, or from the North-Eastward from

from that Strait you passed, where there was a strong Tide before you doubled *Cape Hope*.

I apprehended from the Abstract sent me, that that Strait lay East and West, on the North of which was *Cape Hope* to the North-Westward of which you were embayed, and over shot the Tide. I also apprehend that the Mountain you ascended was opposite to the Strait you observed the Tide to come in at, at its West End, and so you saw along the Length of the Strait from End to End, and the farther End was towards Lord *Weston's Portland*, which according to *Fox* was in $66^{\circ}. 47'$. and you were then in $66^{\circ}. 40'$. so that the East End of that Strait was to the Northward of *Cape Comfort*: Whether the Strait you passed going to *Cape Hope* extended to the Westward of your Course as well as to the Eastward, does not appear from the Abstract you sent me. You also apprehended that the other Strait you saw from the Mountain, thro' which the Tide came, was frozen fast from Side to Side, tho' 6 or 7 Leagues broad; but had it been fast I should imagine it would have obstructed the Tides flowing so rapidly to *Wager River* and to the *Welcome* as you observed it.

Upon the Whole, you have ascertain'd that there can be no Passage from the *Welcome* to 67° —and if there is any to the Northward, it must be attended with more Danger than we apprehended would have been, had it been found at *Whalebone Point*. But there are two Things, I yet can't easily account for; that is, how the black Whales get to *Brook Cobham*, if they don't pass and repass by *Hudson's Strait*, which I think has not been observed by any Journal extant, nor have I heard you mention any seen by you in the *Straits*, at any Time; the other is from whence that Tide can come which flows from *Cape Hope* to the *Welcome*, since a W. by S. Moon made high Water there, and a W. by N. at the *Welcome*:

For

For if *Bylot's*, and *Baffin's* Account be true, that a S. S. E. Moon makes high Water at the Northwest End of *Hudson's* Strait, and a S. by E. Moon at *Cape Comfort*, how could that Tide if it entred the Strait you observed from the Mountain, to the Northward of *Cape Comfort*, and was but 20 Leagues long, be eight Points longer in making high Water, where you were embay'd, where a W. by S. Moon made high Water: This makes it a' Doubt to me, whether it could be from that Tide.

This would make me incline to think if it be from any easterly Tide, it should be from that in *Cumberland* Inlet, where at *Cumberland* Isles, 60 Leagues from the Entrance, in about 66° —it flowed four or five Fathoms by *Davis's* Account; and he said a S. W. by W. Moon, made high Water, but it was there check'd by another Tide which came from the South-west. But to this, there is another Difficulty from *Fox*, who found *Lord Weston's* *Portland* in $66^{\circ} 47'$, which must have been betwixt your new Strait which was in that Latitude and *Cumberland* Isles; and he says the South-eastern Tide followed him so far from *Hudson's* Strait.

These Difficulties I should be glad to have your Opinion upon; and whether you think we ought to discredit their Accounts here, as well as at the *Welcome*, tho' they had more Time here to make regular Observations; or whether, as a great deal of what you pass'd must have been Islands or broken Lands, there might not be some Passages thro' these Straits, North and South, as at *Cape Hope*; where you pass'd the Strait from whence that Tide might flow from the North-Westward; and those Headlands being to the North-Eastward of you, the Tide wou'd return to you from the Eastward. For I observe from *Baffin*, that the Lands to the Westward of this Bay, are very far to the North-Eastward of the

the Strait and Bay in which you were ; so that there was still room for a Passage betwixt 67° and 72°.

From the great Quantity of Ice you met at the *Welcome* which was not mentioned by *Button*, *Fox* or *Scroggs*, I should be glad to know whether you think it has been usually there, or whether these two last Years severe Frost has not occasioned a more than usual Quantity ; for I apprehend the Frost came on at *Churchill*, last Year, in *September*, sooner than it usually happens, and was also longer in clearing out of the River, nor do I think the Ice you met with near *Churchill* in *August*, 1741. has been usually there but after very severe Winters.

When you have Leisure, I shall be glad of your private Thoughts upon these Points, which I hope to have by the Time I get your Draught and Journal; and if there be sufficient Reasons to put an End to any farther Attempt, as I am afraid there is, then I shall consider whether to make an Attempt to open the Trade to the Bay by dissolving the Company, and making Settlements upon the River of *Nelson*, *Moose* and *Albany* to the South Westward, where the Clime will be more temperate, and by that Means not only deprive the *French* of all the Southern and Western Trade of the Bay, but also push our Discoveries thro' that Western Continent, and enlarge our Trade and Power there. If you think this a reasonable Scheme and beneficial for *England*, and will enter into it, I have been preparing some Materials for that Purpose, by a Description of those Countries and Nature of the Climates from the Journals you gave me, and the *French* and other Accounts I have met with, and shall want any farther Informations you can give me of the Trade and Observations of the Country, to shew the Benefit must accrue to *England* upon Opening the Trade and settling the Country.

Had

Had there been any Hopes in prosecuting our first Scheme I should have met you in *London* this Winter, but unless other Business calls me, I believe I shan't, go this Season, and by another Year I hope the *Europæan* War will be brought to a Crisis, and then Time may be spared to look into a farther Improvement of our Trade and Settlements.

I wish you Health and Prosperity in all your Undertakings, and am with great Esteem,

Dear S I R,

Your most obedient

Humble Servant,

Arthur Dobbs.

Lisburn, October 20,
1742.

Mr.

Had

Governor *Isham's* Letter, *Aug. 6, 1743.*

S I R,

I Received yours with Pleasure, and am sorry to hear those two base Men shou'd offer such Violence. Yes, was I in *England* I cou'd take my Oath that those two Men, *Wygate* and *Thompson*, were us'd by you, while here, better than any Men belonging to you, and never shou'd have thought they wou'd avouch such false and abominable Scandal; and I do not doubt but you may clear all Objections they may lay to your Charge where God and Truth is on your Side. One northern Indian return'd, but cou'd give no Account of the other saying he was not put a Shore with him, by which I imagine he killed his Consort. He cou'd give no Account of any Rivers, &c. going directly Inland as soon as a Shore. I hope you'll continue your Health: As for my part I have sent to return Home, but doubt shall not enjoy that Happiness, having been sixty Days this Winter not able to go out of the Room by the Lameness in my Thigh, and a Fever that remains very violent. Poor Trade. Pray my Service to all Friends, hoping you'll accept the same, and I conclude

Your Well-wisher and

P. W. Fort,
C. River. *Aug.*
6, 1743.

Humble Servant,

J. Isham.

Mr.

Mr. Gill's and Lendrick's Letter.

From *Sheerness*, Sept. 27, 1743.

S I R,

WE think ourselves in Gratitude oblig'd, to return our humble Thanks for your Favour, in sending us your Book and Chart. We have read the 'greatest Part of it, and are heartily sorry you should meet with such Treatment, for your Service to your Country; as we are perfectly well assured your circumspect Care and Vigilance did not at all merit such a Return. But we can impute it to nothing but the malicious Suggestions of those two worst of Men, *Wygate* and *Thompson*, whose Behaviour (when on board of the *Furnace*) did but too plainly foretell their subsequent Conduct.

S I R,

Your Most Obedient, and

most Humble Servants,

Daniel Gill, and
John Lendrick.

Mr.

Capt.

S I R,

I Received the Favour of Yours, and am very willing to declare to you, that your late Lieutenant *Mr. Rankin*, whenever I had any Discourse with him about your Discovery in *Hudson's Bay*, was so far from making any Objection to your Conduct, that he was ever speaking in your Praise: He told me you had done every Thing that could be done, but there was no Probability of a Passage into the Western Ocean, and that all the Tides of Flood came from the Eastern Sea: I have read your Defence, and very well know that Lieutenant *Rankin* expressed himself in Terms to this Effect, that no body could do more towards making the Discovery than Captain *Middleton* had done, and I believe all my Officers on Board the *Portsmouth* Store Ship can declare the same; and I should be willing to make Oath of the Truth of what I write to you in case it were required.

I am, S I R,

March 15,
1743-4.

Your very humble Servant,

George Gosling.

To Captain Middleton.

S I R,

Mr. Searle's Letter, March 30, 1744.

Capt. Middleton,

I AM sorry to find you have any Occasion to appear any more in Print to justify your Behaviour in your last Expedition to *Hudson's Bay*, and that some Persons who went with you that Voyage speak now so differently of your Behaviour in that Expedition from what they did soon after their Arrival in *England*. For I particularly remember that Mr. *John Wigate* the Clerk of your Ship, a very little after his coming on Shore, came to me, by your Recommendation, to be advised in an Affair relating to his Mother's Estate, of whom he was one of the Administrators; at which Time we had some Discourse as to what Success you had met with, to which I remember he made Answer, that it was not then publicly known, but when it should be, so far he was sure would appear, that you had done as much as was possible for any Man to do, and also at the same Time expressed himself very much in your Commendation for your general Behaviour to him, and other your Officers during that Voyage. This was spoke by him before *Christmas*, 1742. and said not only in my Hearing on my Enquiry after you, but also in the Hearing of Mr. *Henry Grace*, who then was, and now continues with Me, and well remembers the same as well as myself. and if it will be of any Service to you, are both of us ready to testify the same on Oath, I am,

Doctors Commons,
March 30, 1744.

Your most humble Servant,

John Searle.

To Capt. *Christopher Middleton*.

S I R,

B

I R,

Mr. *Avery's* Letter about *Wygate* and *Thompson*,

April 20, 1744.

S I R,

I AM not a little surpris'd that a Man of your Probity and Knowledge in Sea Affairs should be so violently attacked by a Gentleman of good Sense and Learning on so slender a Basis as that on which Mr. *Dobbs* has founded his Charge: I mean the Evidence of Men, whose Characters make them but of doubtful Credit; since I Myself, Mr. *Westbrooke*, late High Sheriff of *London*, and many more of Reputation heard Messieurs *Thompson* and *Wygate*, whom in Mr. *Dobb's* Remarks have taxed you with Willful Neglect, and corrupt Concealment averr the direct contrary to us, by saying, at the *four Kings* in the *Old Bailey*, where I accidentally met them after your Return, and before I saw you, a little before *Christmas* 1742, that you had done more than any one that ever went that Way, or possibly may be done, by any that ever goes after; and that if there had been any Likelihood of a Passage, you would have found it, and said many other Things to your Advantage, and this voluntarily in a Public Room, where they knew me, and made themselves known to me, as I had forgot them. I was glad to hear of your Health and safe Return, and treated them for the Joyful News to all the Gentlemen present, but in particular to

S I R,

Your Well-wisher, and most humble Servant,

London-House,

D. Avery.

To Captain Christopher Middleton.

The

The Lieutenant's REPORT Page 151 in my Vindication, or N^o. xxx. in the Appendix.

N^o. XXX.

July 15, 1742.

THE Soundings up the East Channel between the Islands and the East Side or *Island* are 45, 40, 30, 25, Fathoms deep, soft Ground in the Middle of the Channel; and 16 Fathoms to 6 Fathoms, within a Quarter of a Cable to some of the Islands, and good Soundings; though, in many Channels between those Islands, Depth of Water is 18 Fathoms where I sounded, and 7 or 8 Fathoms within half a Cable of the Islands; the Channel between the Islands and the Eastside is 3 or 4 Miles broad; we got into a Bay or Cove on the East Side, good clean Ground, and Soundings from 30 to 5 Fathoms; the Tide came from the Southward † through the Islands, it flowed 13 Feet.

The Northernmost Island, bore N. by W. Distance 4 or 5 Miles; the Soundings from the Bay or Cove to the Northernmost Point of this Side of the Bluff, are 45, 40, 30, 20 Fathoms Water according to the Distance we were off Shore above the Islands. From the East Side to the Southwest Side, is || 12 or 13 Leagues broad, the Land runs N. W. by W. the Tide flowed nearest N. W. by W. along Shore; we ran into a Bay or Cove at the North End of the Point this Side of the Bluff; the Soundings from 20, 15, 12, 10, 8, 6, Fathoms, good clear Ground, and clear of Ice.

† Vide subsequent Report, same Date, sign'd by Rankin, where it is S. Westward.

|| In the following Report this is changed to 6 or 7 Leagues broad.

The Tide came from the Southward, it flowed 13 Feet and a half; the Straits above the Island 12 or 13 Leagues broad §. I went upon the highest Land on the East Side, and set the Land; there is a Bluff upon the South Side with three low Islands off it, and a low Point at the Back of it, that bore *South by East* †, and a low sloping Point *, that bore *South by West* off, with that Opening to us. The Land runs from S. by W. to the N. W. a high mountainous Land; it runs down with a Bluff Point, and a low Point at a small Distance from it, and then runs up to a very high mountainous Land, and round to the Bluff Point.

There is an Opening seemingly to me from the high Land, or Bluff I was upon, it being about a quarter Flood or more, by the Tide that came through the Straits; I saw the Ice break up and set round the Point I stood upon, with some Force, that all the Ice was presently in Motion, in the middle of the Channel against the Flood, and was most clear of Ice in the Middle this Morning; it is nine or ten Leagues broad.

July 16, 1742.

John Rankin.

§ Compare this with ditto.

† Compare this with Ditto.

* How did the Lieutenant see the low Point over the Bluff Point at the Back of it?

Another PAPER, or REPORT, sign'd by the Lieutenant, and attested by others; from Mr. Dobbs's Remarks, p. 155.

THE Soundings up the East Channel between the Island and the East Side or Island is 45, 40, 30, and 25 Fathom, soft Ground, in the Middle of the Channel, and from 16 to 6 Fathoms within a Quarter of a Cable's Length to some of the Islands, and good Soundings thro', in many Channels between those Islands. The Depth of Water is 18 Fathoms, where I founded, and 7 or 8 Fathoms within half a Cable's Length of the Islands. The Channel between the Islands and the East Side is three or four Miles broad. We went into a Bay or Cove on the East Side; good clear Ground. Soundings from 30 to 5 Fathoms. The Tide came from the Southwestward * of the Islands, and flowed 13 Foot.

The Northermost Island bearing N. by W. distant 4 or 5 Miles. The Soundings from the Bay or Cove to the Northermost Point on this Side the Bluff is 45, 40, 30, 20 Fathoms, according to the Distance we were off the Shore. Above the Islands from the East Side to the S. W. Side † is 6 or 7 Leagues broad. The Land runs N. W. by West. The Tide flow'd nearest N. W. by W. ‖ along Shore. We ran into a Bay or Cove at the North End of the Point on this Side the high Bluff. The

* In the preceding Report, it is from the Southward 10. So here is from 10 to 6 Points difference; and the Ambiguity shews a Defect of Truth.

† In the preceding Report 12 or 13 Leagues broad.

‖ Here's a flat Contradiction in the last Line but one of the first Paragraph. The Tide, he says, comes from the South-Westward; now it flows nearest N. W. by W. along Shore, that is S. E. by E. in the same Place. Here are 3 different Tides in about 4 Miles distance.

Soundings

Soundings from 20 to 15, 12, 10, 8, 6 Fathoms ; good clear Ground, and clear of the Ice.

The Tide of Flood came from the Southward *, and flow'd 13 Feet and a half †. The Straits above the Islands is 6 or 7 † † Leagues broad †. I went up the highest Land on the East Side, and set the Land by Compass §. There is a Bluff Point on the South Side, with three low Islands off it, and a low Point at the Back of it, that bore S. by E. by Compass ‡ from us, and a low sloping Point, that bore S. by W. with that Opening to us. The Land ran from the S. by W. to the N. W. a high mountainous Land. It ran down with a bluff Point, and a low Point, at a small Distance from it ; and then ran up to a very high mountainous Land, and round again to a high bluff Point. There appearing §§ to me from the high Land I was upon. It being about one Quarter Flood or more by the Tide that came through the Straits. I saw the Ice break up, and set round the Point I stood upon with some Force, that all the Ice was presently in Motion in the Middle of the Channel against the Flood, and was almost clear in the Middle this Morning. It is nine or ten Leagues broad.

July 16, 1742.

John Rankin.

* On the other Side it was from the Southwestward.

† Here are three different Tides in about Miles 4 Distance.

† † In preceding it is 12 or 13.

† † Twelve or thirteen Leagues broad in the preceding Report.

§ N. B. By Compass: So that here is no Variation as mentioned by Mr. Dobbs.

‡ By Compass again.

§§ *Quere*, What appeared.

The Lieutenant's REPORT, N^o. VIII. in my Vindication, p. 108.

I Was ordered to take the Master with me in the eight-oar'd Boat, to sound in the Channel to the Northward of the Islands in the River, and to see for a Harbour for our Ships, near the Mouth of the River, for a safe Retreat, if need be ; but I could find none on the North Side ; but I saw several Openings or Coves on the South Side, but I could not get near them, for the River was very full of Ice from Side to Side.

I made the best of my Way up to the Ships from near the River's Mouth ; I got up to the Island off the Mouth of *Savage Sound*, or River, the Tide came down upon me, and all the Ice, with such Force and Swiftnes, that our Boat must have been smashed into a thousand pieces, if we had not got her instantly into a Cove, or large Field of Ice. We were inclosed with so much Ice, many large Pieces, some of them drew nine or ten Fathom Water ; we were forced upon the South Shore with great Swiftnes, and many pieces were forced upon the Rocks, and others against them with great Force ; we were forced off again near the middle of the River, and carried out of the River's Mouth with the Tide of Ebb above five Leagues, before we could see the least Opening among the Ice, to get the Boat out. About four or five in the Morning, the 26th the Ice opened a little ; I got the Boat out of the Cove, and forced her thro' the Ice, it having little or no Motion ; the Flood Tide being made, we got among loose Ice, and sailed towards the North Shore. About twelve at Noon, the 26th, we got in under the Islands on the North Side, at the Mouth of the River, we lay the Tide of Ebb, and got an Board of the Ship at half an Hour past nine at Night.

July 27, 1742.

John Rankin.

B 4

The

The Lieutenant and Master's REPORT in Page 110
of my Vindication.

NUMBER X.

*Pursuant to an Order from Captain Christopher
Middleton, Commander of his Majesty's Ship the
Furnace, bearing Date the 27th of July 1742.*

WE whose Names are hereunto subscribed, took the *Furnace's* Six Oar'd Boat, and went from *Savage Sound*, where his Majesty's Ships *Furnace* and *Discovery* then lay; and on the 28th, at one in the Morning, arrived at *Deer Sound*, where we tried the Tide, and found the Flood to come into that Place from the River *Wager*, and rose at that Time ten Feet. At Six o'Clock the same Morning we left *Deer Sound*, (where we put the two Northern *Indians* a-shore to kill some Deer for our Sick Men) and sailed for a high bluff Land on the N. W. Side of the River *Wager*. Our Course from the Islands on the North Side of *Deer Sound* to the high bluff Land, was N. W. by N. by Compass; we sounded frequently, and had no Ground with a Line of Sixty-eight Fathom, all the Way over. When we were a-breast of the high bluff Land, we steer'd W. N. W. keeping the Mid-channel, and still found no Ground at 98 * Fathoms, except nigh some Islands that lay in the Fair Way, about one third over the River, and 30 Fathoms within a League of one of them. This Course we kept till we got about 15 Leagues from *Deer Sound*, but finding the Tide or Fresh against us, and the Wind coming Fair, we were afraid to stay any longer, for fear of hindering the Ships from going to Sea; however, we came

* Error of the Press, it should be 68.

to a Grapnell with the Boat, and went upon a high Mountainous Land, where we had a very fair View of the River. From whence we saw a great Run or Fall of Water between the supposed Main Land and the aforesaid Islands, very Narrow seemingly, not a Mile Broad, and about a League from where the Boat lay; but to the Northwards we discovered a large Collection of Water, in which were several Islands, and high Mountainous Land on both Sides of it, the West Side having many bluff Points and broken Land. In our Return towards the Ships and not far from *Deer Sound*, we saw several large black Whales, of the Whalebone-kind, some of which came very near the Boat; so that upon the Whole, we think there may be some other Passage, into the Sea from the River *Wager*, besides that which his Majesty's Ships *Furnace* and *Discovery* came in at, and imagine there is a great Probability of an Opening or Inlet into the Sea, somewhere on the *East* Side thereof, tho' we cannot fix the Place. Given under our Hands this first Day of *August* 1742.

John Rankin,

Robert Wilson.

The Lieutenant's REPORT in Mr. *Dobbs's* Remarks
Page 138.

NUMBER XXXIV.

“ JULY the 29th 1742, I was ordered with
 “ the Master to take the Six Oar'd Boat, and
 “ to go up *Savage Sound* as high as *Deer Sound*, and
 “ try the Tides. I find that the Flood there comes
 “ from the River *Wager*†, it flowed there 10 Foot
 “ Water.
 “ We then sailed from *Deer Sound* for the high
 “ Bluff Land on the N. W. Side of the River
 “ *Wager*. The Course from the Islands off the
 “ North Side of *Deer Sound* is N. W. and N. W. by
 “ N. by Compass. We sounded all the Way over,
 “ and had no Ground with a Line of 68 Fathom,
 “ to the high Bluff Land. We then run up a
 “ Branch of the Main River, and sounded and found
 “ 50 Fathom, one third over that Branch. There
 “ were several Islands in it. Sounded about a League
 “ off an Island on the North Side, and found 30
 “ Fathom Water. In running between the Islands
 “ and the supposed Main, which was on the West
 “ Side of that Branch,§ the Tide or Freshes suddenly
 “ turned against us, the Boat altering the Land very
 “ much before; sounded near some of the Islands,
 “ and had no Ground at 68 Fathoms. As we run
 “ up it we sounded near a small Island, and had
 “ 29 Fathoms. We steer'd W. N. W. between
 “ the Islands, and the West Land by Compass,
 “ there being several Islands in the Fair Way, and
 “ no Ground in the Middle of the Channel at 68
 “ Fathoms. We went about 15 Leagues above

† He was all the while in the *River Wager*.

§ This Branch and the fifty Fathom are quite new to make
 this Branch more in Mr. *Dobb's* favour, as from that, broken
 Land may be supposed.

“ Deer Sound, and saw a Fresh or Run of Water
 “ coming against us; and the Wind being Fair
 “ I was afraid to stay any longer, for fear of
 “ hindering the Ships from going to Sea. There is
 “ a great Probability of an Opening on the † West
 “ Side by the coming in of the Whales §, but I could
 “ not go higher up to try it for the abovementioned
 “ Reason.
 “ We went to the Top of a high Mountainous
 “ Land, from whence we saw a great Run or Fall
 “ of Water between the West Land and the Islands,
 “ it was very Narrow, seemingly not a Mile Broad ||;
 “ and at the same Time saw a Fair Channel or
 “ Strait to the Northwards of the Islands, with
 “ Land on both Sides as high as the Cape of Good
 “ Hope, running away to the Westward *, with many
 “ Bluff Points and Broken Lands. In coming
 “ down we saw several very large black Whales §§,
 “ playing about the Boat and in Shore.

John Rankin.

August 1,
 1742.

† In the preceding Report signed by Lieut. Rankin and the Master, it is said *there was a great Probability of an Opening somewhere on the East Side*, here the Probability is on the West Side the S. and by E. Opening mentioned in Lieut. Rankin's Report of July 16, allowing the Variation is S. E. and towards the Mouth of Wager River, where his Whales came in.

§ These Whales at the upper End of Wager River are foisted in.

|| This is the large spacious Strait mentioned in the Lieutenant's additional Account, Page 62, 63. Mr. Dobbs's Remarks.

* This Channel, &c. running away to Westward is in no other Report, and contradicted by his own and the Master's joint Report.

§§ In the first joint Report of Lieutenant and Master, they say, *in our Return towards the Ships and not far from Deer Sound we saw several large black Whales*. Here in Favour of Mr. Dobbs the Lieutenant says in general, *in coming down, &c. See Guy's Affidavit. p. 30. in Appendix.*

P R I C E's

PRICE'S REPORT.

I JOHN PRICE, Carpenter's Mate of the *Furnace Sloop*, am ready and willing to make Oath, that on *Sunday* the 19th of *July*, 1742, I went into the Boat with Captain *Middleton* three or four Leagues above *Deer Sound*, endeavouring to get over to the South Side of *Wager River*, but could not for Ice above half the Way; and I and several others of the Boat's Crew tasted and drank the Water in the middle of *Wager River*, and found it but just brackish, yet almost as salt at *Savage Sound*, where the Ships lay, as in the Sea. I cannot remember that the two *Indians* wept when they went on Shore, one of them seem'd very willing to go, the other would have stay'd, but the Captain had, as he told us, engag'd to return them home to their own Friends, or to *Churchill*. I believe none had the Discovery more at Heart than Captain *Middleton*, and he was always encouraging every Body to that End, and ready to instruct the Lieutenant, Mates, and others, in making Observations more than I ever saw in any Ship before. In particular, several Persons that went the Voyage on Mr. *Dobb's* Recommendation, were instructed carefully by him in Navigation, and preferr'd in the Voyage.

May 27,
1743.

JOHN PRICE.

George

George Bentley's REPORT.

GEORGE BENTLEY, Mariner, late on board the *Furnace Sloop*, Captain *Middleton*, Commander, is ready and willing to make Oath, that he never heard of any Threatning of the Captain to cane, or broomstick, or lash any one for concerning themselves about the Discovery; that the *Indians* went voluntarily, and seemingly very well pleased, aboard a good firm, tight Boat, and were towed ashore to *Brook-Cobbam*, having been well furnish'd with sufficient Presents and Stores to serve them home, as also with Arms, Powder and Ball fully sufficient to secure them from any Enemy that they might meet with, and as much as they could have got by seven Years Trade. That by every thing he saw and heard of the Captain's Behaviour during the whole Voyage, he sincerely believes that the Captain had the Discovery at Heart above all things, and neglected no means of encouraging every one to promote it.

May 27,
1743.

his
G E O R G E X B E N T L E Y .
Mark.

Richard

George

ICE.

T.

te of the
to make
1742, I
three or
ouring to
river, but
and I and
and drank
and found
at *Savage*
I can-
when they
willing to
e Captain
em home
ieve none
Captain
ng every
he Lieu-
servations
In par-
oyage on
ted care-
d in the

Richard Guy's AFFIDAVIT.

RICHARD GUY, this Deponent, late Quarter-Master on board of the *Discovery* Pink, *William Moor*, Master, maketh Oath, that this Deponent was up the River *Wager*, the last Time the Boat went from the Ships at *Savage Sound*, which was the 27th, and we returned on board the first Day of *August* following, 1742. we found the Water but barely brackish three or four Leagues above *Deer Sound*, and the higher up the fresher. We came to a Grapling about three Miles below a fresh Stream, and went upon a high mountainous Land, and had a fair View of the River, from whence we saw a great Run or Fall of Water; the Master of the *Furnace* and myself, who were at least five Miles farther than the Lieutenant, went between the supposed Island and main Land, very narrow, seemingly not a Mile broad, and about one League from where the Boat lay. This Deponent farther maketh Oath, that the several Lakes between the Mountains and Valleys were occasioned by melted Snow from off the Top of the Hills there, and that such as were seen at *Deer Sound*, and on the South Shore of *Wager* River, and indeed every where wherever we landed for many Miles round, where those Lakes were. These large Collections of Waters spoken of, must be nothing but those Lakes which I plainly saw, when I was the farthest from the Boat after a Herd of Deer, of which I killed two at that Time: What they call Islands were nothing but uneven Mountains and deep Valleys, as we found elsewhere on both Sides of the River *Wager*; so that I am certain that it is all main Land, and that the River runs but very little higher up, and towards the Northward, not only from the little Water we found it flowed

flowed the highest we could go, which was not above five or six Foot, but that the Water was so fresh all the Way, from three or four Leagues above *Deer Sound*, that the Men drank it along-side, and boiled their Venison, and made Broth, and drank of it. My Opinion is, that the Freshness of the Water could not be caused by melted Snow and the Ice from the Mountains; if so, the lower Parts of the River, or nearer to its Entrance, as also the *Welcome*, the *New-straits* and *Repulse Bay*, would have been fresh, or but brackish, from the far greater Quantities of Ice and Snow, from the vast Number of Waterfalls which empty themselves in there, which, on the contrary, we found as salt as the Ocean. And this Deponent farther maketh Oath, that he saw no Storehouses of Whale-finn or Blubber up the River *Wager*, much higher than *Deer Sound*; and yet there was seen all down the East Shore, within two Miles of the River's Mouth, great Quantities of Finn and Blubber. And this Deponent farther maketh Oath, that all the Flood Tides came from the frozen Straits, from the East and by North, the Course of the new Straits by Compass, and it was very strong, and ran four Knots off the Mouth of the frozen Straits, and also in the narrow of the new Strait. And this Deponent farther maketh Oath, that all the Way between the River *Wager*, and the Latitude 63° or *Brook Cobbam*, they were sure of the main Land, and were never above three or four Leagues off, excepting in one or two Places where meeting with shoal Water. We lay too in the Night-time and in thick Weather, that we might not pass any Place unseen, and stood in Shore in the Day; and that off the Head-land in 63° and 20° we were not two Leagues from it in nine Fathom Water. We coasted all along Shore, and anchored at *Brook Cobbam*. And this Deponent farther maketh Oath, that the two northern *Indians* were so far from being forced

forced into a leaky Boat against their Will, that they went voluntarily into a good tight Boat, which the Deponent saw well caulk'd two Days before, and seem'd highly pleas'd at their Departure, as well they might, for they had more Arms, Ammunition and Goods given them than they could have traded in seven Years. And this Deponent farther maketh Oath, that he was two Nights ashore upon *Brook Cobham*, or *Marble Island*, with the *Indians*, and saw them work the Boat with Sails and Oars, and that they had but two Leagues to the main Land, and design'd as soon as they got on the main Land, to rip the Boat up, and make Sledges, according to the Country's Custom, as the Linguist inform'd me. And this Deponent further maketh Oath, that he never heard of any Rumours about the Neglect of the Discovery on board either of the Ships, but quite to the contrary; Captain *Middleton's* Treatment was very kind both to Officers and Men; and that no Body could take more Pains and Care in making all Kinds of Observations that might help towards a Discovery; as also in instructing others who were ignorant, to do the like. And this Deponent farther maketh Oath, that out of above twenty Men which they had on board the *Discovery* from *Churchill* home, there were not above four or five in a Watch able to go aloft to hand or reef a Sail, including Officers, though this Ship was better manned than the *Furnace*; infomuch that in *Wager* River they were oblig'd to send most of their Hands to assist aboard the *Furnace*, where they had few besides sick Men. And this Deponent farther maketh Oath, that there was no Appearance of any Inlets or Straits that could give any hopes of a Passage from the Latitude 63° to 67° and $20'$, excepting the frozen Straits and River *Wager*: For I am very certain from the time I was upon *Brook Cobham*, that there was no Appearance of any Inlets, Straits, or River; nothing but

but a Bay. And this Deponent farther maketh Oath, that he never heard of any Concealment of a Passage, or Neglect, or ill Usage to the Ships Companies or Indians: For surely if there had, he this Deponent should have known of it at the Islands of *Orkney* at our Return, or in the River of *Thames*, before our Ships were paid; for it is nothing but what has been newly trump'd up by Vilains for their own Purposes. And this Deponent farther maketh Oath, that he sincerely believes, no Man had the Discovery so much at heart as Captain *Middleton*; for on *Friday Aug. 6, 1742.* in the Evening, being off Cape *Hope*, and taking it to be the extream Part of *America*, seeing no Land to the Northward of that Cape over Night in our Way, he was so overjoyed at the Sight thereof, that he ordered on that Account both the Ships Companies strong Beer to drink; but many others, both Officers and Men were quite disheartned for fear of undergoing another dismal Winter, if that had proved a Passage, seeing at all Times Captain *Middleton's* Boldness, in encountering with Dangers more than they ever saw; as I have heard them all declare, both Ships Companies, in all the Years they had used the Sea, and none with greater Care, as being always upon Deck when the Ship was under Way, and near Land or Danger: This I have heard often repeated from the *Furnace's* Officers and Men. And this Deponent farther maketh Oath, that there was put on board of the *Discovery* Pink, Goods, somewhere in the River of *Thames*, to be traded in *Hudson's* Bay, as Mr. *James Smith* affirmed to me several Times, with the Indians, for Skins or Furrs; and that the aforesaid Goods, on board, were such as the *Hudson's* Bay Company traded with the Natives there. And this Deponent farther maketh Oath, that he hath not only seen the Goods which were in Bales and Chests, but has also seen the Invoice. And this Deponent

C

farther

farther maketh Oath, that the said *James Smith*, told him several times, that the said Goods did cost in *England*, above one hundred Pounds Sterling; and that he said his Brother *Samuel Smith*, had provided the aforesaid Trading Goods on Board of the *Discovery* Pink.

Richard Guy.

Middlesex, } Sworn before me, the } *J. Poulson.*
to wit. } 26th of *Sept.* 1743.

Mr. Butler's REPORTS.

TH E S E are to certify whom it may or doth concern, that I *John Butler*, have carefully examin'd the Vocabulary of the northern Indian Language, which is said to be taken by *Edward Thompson*, from the Mouths of the two Indians who were on board of his Majesty's Ship *Furnace*, Captain *Middleton*, Commander; in his late Voyage on the Discovery, in 1742. which is printed in Mr. *Dobbs's* Account of the Countries adjoining to *Hudson's Bay*, is all false, and is only imposing upon the Public; can be nothing but what he has formed from his own Brain; it is no Tongue that I have ever heard spoken from any Indian that ever came down to the Factory; also his way of counting is false.

March, 8,
1743.

John Butler.

Mr.

Mr. *Deville's* REPORT of the Conversations he has had with Mr. Rankin, Mr. Thompson, and Mr. Wygate, late Lieutenant, Surgeon, and Clerk of the Furnace Sloop, when under the Command of Capt. Christopher Middleton, and others at several Times, since his Arrival from the late Discovery.

THE first notice I had of Capt. *Middleton's* Arrival, (he being a Friend and an old Acquaintance of mine) I went down the River, and went on board of the *Furnace* in *Erith* Reach. Upon my going on board I ask'd Capt. *Middleton*, if I might congratulate him upon his finding a Passage out of *Hudson's* Bay into the *Western Ocean* of *America*; to which he replied, it was not yet proper to be known to any, before he had been with his Masters the *Lords* of the *Admiralty*, which he desired me to excuse. I should know it as soon as he went to *Town*, and had been with their *Lordships*. He gave the same Answer to Mr. *Samuel Smith*, and all others that came on Board, whilst I was on Board. I came up to *Galleons* in the Ship, and had a great deal of Discourse with Mr. *Rankin*, Mr. *Thompson* and Mr. *Wygate*, they being all acquainted with me before they went out the Voyage, at several times when all the three were together, and by themselves severally. I never heard of any in my Lifetime have such large Encomiums given him, as the three above Gentlemen gave of Capt. *Middleton*, and that no Man ever had done so much, or would be able to do the like concerning the Discovery, as he had done, and that all the Lives of both Ship's Companies, were owing to his *Vigilance*, *Care*, *Experience*, and *Conduct*; and if Capt. *Middleton* had died in the Voyage, as his Life was often in danger, by being in very bad State of Health, God knows what would have become of them all, for as it was, they

they never expected to have seen *England*, on the Account of the *dangerous Navigation*, and having not above four or five Men in a *Watch* able to do Duty aloft, before they got to the *Islands of Orkneys*, where they imprest eight or nine Men. This was constantly repeated, whenever we sat down in Company together, out of the Captain's Company, by all the aforesaid Gentlemen, and by all others on Board that ever I heard.

I was several times in Company with the said Officers, as abovementioned, and lay on Board the *Furnace*, after the Ship came up to *Woolwich*; the Captain intrusted me to get his Stores on Shore, when he has been ashore about other Business; they were always upon the same Story, about what a Miracle it was, that they had got home again! What greater Matters the Captain had done! And none ever could have done so much, nor none would ever be able to do the like, &c.

After the Ship was out of Commission, which was the 16th Day of *Nov.* the Captain got me to go down, and get every thing that belong'd to him out: He was at my House, where his Lodgings were, when in Town; then I knew they had found no Passage was there out of the Bay into the Western Ocean of *America*: So, says I to them, I find you you did not find the Passage? No, they all answered, we had done all that could be done; if there had been any such Thing, the Captain would have found it out; but it was the same, he has put it for ever out of Dispute for the future, and had gone a great many Leagues farther than any before him had done, and farther Tryals that Way would be needless: If there had been a Passage, the Devil might go that Way for them; those Parts were never clear of Ice, above a Week or a Fortnight in a Year, and they thanked their GOD that they had got safe Home again, &c. All this, both the *Lieutenant*, Surgeon, and Clerk, have

have said often in my Company at my House, and at other Places where we were together, declared the same, or Words to the same Effect, until after *Christmas* 1742. or until *Wygate* shew'd me a Letter which he had received from Mr. *Dobbs*; and then he altered his Tone, but the Lieutenant continued the same, until after *Dobbs* came to *England*, and until after he shewed the Captain and me a Letter that he had received from Mr. *Dobbs*, to go and dine with him, and also when he had signed the Captain's Journal, along with the Master and Mr. *James Smith*, at my House.

Mr. *Wygate* lodged next Door to me, in a House of mine, four Months after the Ship was paid; and he and his Wife often eat and drank at my Table; along with the Captain; there was also very often the Lieutenant coming to see Capt. *Middleton*, he was a long time in a bad State of Health, that I had much of their Company, as also the Surgeon; the great Matters which Capt. *Middleton* had done in the late Voyage were always in their Mouths, &c.

Mr. *Samuel Smith*, often used to come to Captain *Middleton*, and several more of Mr. *Dobbs*'s Friends; but the last time *Samuel Smith* came was the beginning of *February*, and much importuned Capt. *Middleton* to write to Mr. *Dobbs*, that there might be still hopes of a Passage, though he thought otherwise. I remember very well that the Captain spoke of it with some Surprise, just after *Smith* was gone, to me and my Wife; and we all thought it a strange Saying. I asked the Captain, what Answer he made him; Capt. *Middleton* said, he told him that he could do no such Injustice, since all Things proved the contrary.

Either that Night or the next Night, I carried a Letter unsealed, with some other Papers I did see the Captain inclose in it, for Mr. *Smith*, to carry along with him for Mr. *Dobbs*, he was to set out early

early in the Morning for *Ireland*; I paid a Bill the Morning he sat out, and brought the Captain, *Smith's* Receipt. It was at this time, or a Day or two before the Bill was paid, that *Smith* spoke these Words above, tho' he wants to be off it now, I see by Mr. *Dobbs's* Book.

Mr. *Rankin* was the first that came to Capt. *Middleton* and shewed him a Letter from Mr. *Dobbs*, as is related in Capt. *Middleton's* Book.

Also Mr. *James Smith's* coming several times, as is related in Capt. *Middleton's* Book, I know to be true, and can add farther, that *Thompson* and *Wygate* threatned to beat him the said *Smith*, for telling Capt. *Middleton* what they were about, and said, Capt. *Middleton* deserved to be cut into pound Pieces†, and they threatned *Smith*; he was very much frightened. This was at the time that the said *Smith* came to desire Capt. *Middleton* to give him one of his Maps for Capt. *Obrian*, he also asked the Captain to lend him a little Money to carry him on board, and he would give him a Note on his Brother for that, and what he had had of him in the Voyage, that he might get out of the way of *Wygate* and *Thompson*, which the Captain did, and he stayed till it was Night for fear of the said *Thompson* and *Wygate*. The Captain desired him to stay a little longer until he saw Mr. *Rankin* and the Master, whom he expected to come up to compare their Journals with his.

Mr. *Rankin* came the next Day, after *Smith* had been telling the Captain about the two above Persons, the said *Rankin* and *Wilson* together with *Smith*, compared the *Furnace's* Journal together, as is related in the Captain's Book, and *Rankin* and *Wilson* declared an Abhorrence of Mr. *Dobb's* practising with them, and both of them said they would go no more

† Compare this with the Affidavits of *Thompson* and *Wygate*, in Mr. *Dobb's* Remarks, p. 148. of his Appendix.

to Mr. *Dobbs* again. Says the Captain, *Dobbs* has been at your House, as your Wife tells me, and said I threatned to cane you in the Voyage, he laughed and said Yes. I never heard of it before he told my Wife!

Soon after this, I being in Company with Mr. *Wygate*, and he shewing his Letters which he had received from Mr. *Dobbs*, and what great Matters he was promised from the said *Dobbs*, I asked him how his Word would ever be taken more, and how he could be so great a Rogue to Capt. *Middleton*? He swore he went that Voyage only to get to be made Purser, and that Capt. *Middleton* might have made him one if he pleased, and if he would not, some body must do it, or Words to that Effect, and swore he never made a Voyage but he made some body pay him a 100*l.* more than his Wages, and thus he went on, why should Captains get all and he none. I do not know I ever saw him sober one Day in a Week all the Time that he was at home, unless when he was sick in Bed with Drinking, which used to be two Days out of seven, and this way all the time until his Money was gone, and that Mr. *Dobbs* came over; drunk, sick, or never sober.

Last *September* I was down with Mr. *Russel*, Capt. *Middleton* and other Gentlemen to the *Nore*, in the Duke of *Bedford's* Yatch, making Observations and trying an Instrument, by Order of the Navy Board, Mr. *Russel* and Capt. *Middleton* supped on board the *Monmouth* with Capt. *Wyndham*, I was sometime with *Lendrick* and Mr. *Gill*, these two Gentlemen belonged formerly to Capt. *Middleton*, and had been the Voyage in the *Furnace* with him and were recommended by Mr. *Dobbs* and his Friends to the Captain; when I told them, Mr. *Lendrick* and *Gill*, what trouble Capt. *Middleton* had met with from the Surgeon and Clerk, they were surpris'd and said they were the worst of Men, and would swear

swear any thing for Lucre or Gain, that Capt. *Middleton* deserved the greatest Encouragement, for what he had done to serve the Public, and they were sure none could have done more. Mr. *Gill* came up with us, having Leave from Capt. *Wyndbam* in getting another Man in his Room. Capt. *Middleton* sent down to Mr. *Lendrick* his Book, and when he had read it, and came to Town, the Ship's Company had Leave, whilst their Ship was repairing, to come to Town, and when up, called several times at my House, and went into the Country to dine with the Captain, and desired he would get an Order from the *Admiralty* to summons them, for without that, they should disoblige some of their Friends in Town, as also in *Ireland*, if they should declare the Truth without being compelled to it; that every thing that was in that Book against Capt. *Middleton* was false, they could take their Oaths of it. But before they went away, they would give Capt. *Middleton* a Letter from under their Hands, to satisfy him that nothing should alter them from speaking the Truth, which Letter I have seen and was sent up from the *Nore*, and most of the Men as they came to Town, used to wait on the Captain and offer him their Affidavits to the Truth of what they knew in particular; *John Armount* came after the Captain several times, but he thanked them, he believed it would not signify much, and since I see the Honourable Lieutenant *Rankin* has got him *Armount* to support his Nonsense again. I shall be willing to make Oath of the Truth of what I write here in case that it is required.

John Dewilde.

March 26, 1744.

Cornwall

Cornwall Downs, March 1, 1743-4.

S I R,

TO the best of our Judgment we have wrote Answers to your *Queries*, and are greatly concerned, that such a brave just Commander has been so barbarously used by those you always treated as your Children. We heartily wish that it were in our Power to serve such a brave Commander as you have been to us, and hope that Justice will take Place, which will be great Satisfaction to

Your most humble Servants,

John Donalson, Cooper.

William Iverson, Quarter-Master.

George Monro, Seaman.

Robert Gill, Gunner's Mate.

QUERIES answered by JOHN DONALSON, Cooper; WITLIAM IVERSON, Seaman; GEORGE MONRO, and ROBERT GILL, late under the Command of Captain CHRISTOPHER MIDDLETON, Commander of his Majesty's Sloop Furnace.

QUERIES.

ANSWERS.

WHETHER the Lieutenant and Master went up *Wager* River, on their Return, they said the Water was fresh the higher they went up, but barely brackish above *Deer-Sound*, and that most of the Men drank of it, along-side of the Boat all the Way for two or three Leagues above *Deer-Sound*, going up the farthest the Boat went.

THE last Time the Lieutenant and Master went up *Wager* River, at their Return on board, they declared the higher they went up the River the Water freshen'd; and that above *Deer-Sound* the Men drank of the Water along-side of the Boat in the Mid-Channel, and all the Boat's Crew declared the same.

II.

Whether they did not hear the Lieutenant and Master, and *Richard Guy*, and all the Men that were up the River in the Boat, when farthest up, say at their Return, and several Times in our Voyage home, that there was no

II.

We have heard the Lieutenant, Master, and *Richard Guy*, and all the Men that were in the Boat declare several Times in our Voyage home, that it was a fresh Water River, and that there was no going farther up for Water-

743-4.

ve wrote
e greatly
ander has
ays treat-
t it were
mander as
ffice will
n to

r-Master.

late.

RIES

going farther up the said River, for Water-falls and a fresh Stream; and that it was impossible to expect any Hopes of a Passage that Way, up a fresh Water River into the Western Ocean, or the *South-Sea*; and whether they did ever hear any Officer on board desire the Captain to let them make any more Trials up the said River,

Water-falls and fresh Streams. We farther declare, that we never heard any Officer desire Leave to search farther up *Wager* River.

III.

Whether they ever heard me threaten any Man or Officer for saying the Discovery was neglected by me, and whether there was any high Words used by me that I would cane some and broomstick and lash others if they concerned themselves about a Passage.

III.

We declare that we never heard any high Words used by Captain *Middleton* to any Officer or Seaman on board, about the Passage, or ever heard it spoken that the Passage was neglected; on the contrary, we farther declare, that Capt. *Middleton* instructed the Lieutenant, Master, and all other Officers that would ask him any Questions, that they wanted to know, how to heave the Log, try the Currents, work their Day's Work, &c. and draw Charts and Maps of the Coast.

Whe-

IV.

Whether when we got out of *Wager* River we did not meet the Flood Tide in going to the Eastward, towards the frozen Straits, and whether we did not try the Tide every Hour or every two Hours with the Current Log or Grapling, and lost one Grapling in trying the Tide a Day or two after we got out of the River by the strong Tide of the Narrows of the New Straits half Way betwixt *Wager* River and the frozen Straits, where I went ashore, and after the Grapling was lost by the Master he tried it again, and whether it did not run above four Knots.

V.

Whether the Gunner and Carpenter next Morning after they were on board declared, that the Place they landed upon, was or was not an Island, and whether they did report it was; as they could

IV.

We very well remember, that when we got out of *Wager* River we met the Flood Tide, which came strong from Eastward, where we discovered the frozen Straits, we tried the Tides every Hour or every two Hours with our Current Log. We remember that the Master lost a Grapling in trying the Tide a Day or two after we got out of *Wager* River by the Strength of the Tide, which ran four Knots in the new Straits.

V.

We remember that when the Gunner and Carpenter and some other Men came on board; they said that the Place they had been on was main Land, and that it actually joined to the low
Mid-

Whe-

see farther than I ; whether it was not confirmed on board, that there was no Tide between the low Beach and Cape *Frigid* ? and whether the Ship had not like to have been hauled into the frozen Straits, and when I went from the Ship whether I did not order the Lieutenant to make Sail from the Mouth of the frozen Straits, for Fear of the Tide of Ebb, which I told him was made a little after 8 that Morning should haul the Ships in ; and whether I did not go from the Ship that Morning about 10 o'Clock, whether the Carpenter did not give me a Drawing of that frozen Strait the next Morning, done with a Black-lead Pencil, and whether he and the Gunner both agreed that this Strait was full of Ice from Side to Side ; whether the Time I was ashore there, the *Discovery* Pink was ever above a Mile or two from the *Furnace* while they were working and staying for my coming off ?

Beach. We farther remember, that Captain *Middleton* ordered the Lieutenant to make Sail from the large Opening that we then saw, which was the Mouth of the frozen Straits, the Tide of Ebb being made a little after 8 that Morning, and then the Captain went on Shore in the six oar'd Boat to high Land, which was not far from us ; this was about 10 in the Morning, the Tide set strong into this Strait or Inlet. We very well remember that they all agreed that the Place was not an Island, and that the Carpenter, gave Capt. *Middleton* a Draught of the frozen Straits the next Morning with a Black-lead Pencil, and that all the Straits were fast froze. We remember that all the Time the Captain was on Shore, that the *Discovery* Pink was not above a Mile or two from the *Furnace*, lying to for the Boat, and some of us have seen the Copy of the Draught with the Carpenter after he came to *England* in his own Custody. Whe-

VI.

VI.

Whether in our Return from Cape *Frigid*, where I was last on Shore, to the Island of *Brook Cobbam*, we did not see the Land all the Way very plain? whether we did not keep as near the Land as the Rocks and Islands would permit us all the Way from *Whalebone Point* to *Brook Cobbam*, excepting in one or two Places where we met with Shoal Water and thick Weather; we did not stand in with the same Land again we had left and rounded all the Bays so as to make it plain the main Land; whether we were seldom above 3 Leagues or four off the Shore, except in the Night, and then stood back the next Morning to fetch up what we had lost by driving all the Way from 64 to *Brook Cobbam*.

We very well remember, that the above Query are really Matter of Fact, and nothing but the real Truth.

Whe

VII.

Whether we did not constantly every Hour, or every two Hours, heave the Ships to found and try the Tides with the Current Log, not only in our Outward-bound Passage from Brook *Cobham*, where we water'd at, but also in our Return? Whether we did not constantly do this every Hour in lying to, and got the Slack of the the Tides at high and low Water?

VIII.

Whether they in their own Conscience, ever believed that any Neglect could be charged to me in the Voyage? Or, whether they think, I could have found, or did know of any Passage into the *South Sea*, and concealed it? Whether every Officer and Man in both Ships were not overjoy'd, when they heard and saw we were returning home from the Discovery, or whether

VII.

We very well remember, constantly every two Hours we heave the Ship too, to found and try the Tides outward and home-ward bound from Brook *Cobham*, and that we watered there. We remember, that the Captain was extraordinary careful to have the heights of the Tides, and low Water.

VIII.

We are certain in our own Conscience, that there never was the least Room for any Suspicion that Captain *Middleton* ever neglected the Discovery, but on the contrary we believe that he had the Discovery at Heart more than any Officer or Man on board, by his Conduct and Behaviour to all the Ship's Company, he encouraged every Officer and Man that had the least Notion of Seaman-ship

the Lieutenant or any Officer in either Ship would have had me to have made any farther Search, and I refused it? whether I did not keep the Deck more than any Officer in the Ship, and was as often at the Mast-head to look out for all Openings and broken Lands, as any Person on board?

ship in every curious Question that they asked him, and was always satisfied to see any Officer and Man forward to enquire into the Nature of the Passage. We really believe that the Captain never knew any thing of a Passage into the *South Sea* that Way; we very well remember; that all the Ship's Company, Officers included, were overjoyed when we returned from the Discovery, I, *John Donalson*, and *William Iverson* have often heard the Lieutenant declare, that he was more satisfied than if he had received 1000 *l.* and hoped that he should see *England* once more, and that he really believed under God, that all our Lives were owing to Captain *Middleton's* Care, Conduct, and good Management. We declare that we never heard it talk'd of that any Officer ever desired the Captain to make any farther Search, but on the contrary were all overjoyed, as we have said before; we declare that the Captain was often at

D. the

the Mast-head, and kept the Deck more than any Man or Officer on board, and that we have known him to keep the Deck for 48 Hours ; we never saw the Lieutenant up aloft all the whole Voyage.

IX.

Whether I ever threatned the Surgeon for being too intimate with the *Indians*, to come at a Knowledge of a Passage, or whether the Surgeon understood any thing those *Indians* said, or whether they ever heard the Linguist ever speak of the *Indians* knowing of a Passage, or a Way to a Copper-mine, and I wou'd not hear them, or whether any such thing was ever mentioned on board of the Ship, in the Voyage home, or after we came home, before they saw or heard of my Book.

IX.

We very well remember, that Captain *Middleton* never threatned the Surgeon but for Neglect of his Duty, which well might be done ; and if he had his due he would be hang'd like a Dog as he is ; Captain *Middleton* always encouraged the Vilain. Captain *Middleton* gave the *Indians* all sorts of Goods and Toys that he had, to encourage them to instruct the Surgeon in their Language, but it was impossible for any Man to have learnt any of it in so short a Time as they were on board ; nor we nor any Man on board ever heard the Linguist ever speak of the *Indians* knowing of a Passage or Way to a Copper-mine.

Whe-

X.

Whether they ever heard me threaten to take away any Books or Papers from any Body on board, or whether I hindered any Body on board from keeping Books and Journals, or whether I hindered any thing to be marked in the Logg-Book that could give any Hopes of a Passage during our Voyage.

X.

We never heard the Captain threaten to take any Books or Papers from any Body, but on the contrary encouraged every Person on board; we never heard that the Captain hindered any thing being entered into the Logg-Book; but in short we are very conscious, that the Captain did endeavour to the utmost of his Power to discover a Passage, and what we have asserted in Answer to these several Queries, we are ready to make Oath of the Truth in every Point, as Witnesses our Hands this second Day of *March*, 1743-4.

*On board the Cornwall in the Downs,
Captain Holmes Commander.*

*John Donalson.
William Iverfon.
George Monro.
Robert Gill,*

QUERIES.

QUERIES Answered by *Robert Carew* Mate of the *Discovery*.

QUERIES.

WHether the last Time the Lieutenant and Master went up *Wager River*, there was any Ice to interrupt the Passage of the Boat, from the time they left the Head Land above *Deer Sound*, until they arrived at the high Bluff on the West Side of the Channel, and whether the Water was not Salt, and above 68 Fathoms Deep the whole Way over, and the Strait from 8 to 10 Leagues Wide, and whether the Channel Course after they came up with that Bluff, did not bear W. S. W.

II.

Whether when they went on Shore on that high Land, the Lieutenant did not see a great Opening, or a large Col-

ANSWERS.

I WAS not in the Boat up *Wager River*, but when the Boat returned on Board of the *Furnace*, Mr. *Moor* came from her and ordered me to write in the *Discovery's* Logg-Book, that the Lieutenant had given an Account that there was no Likelihood of a Passage that Way, it was nothing but a River; and all our Men that were Part of the Boat's Crew, declared the Water was so Fresh after they had got up two Leagues above *Deer Sound*, that all the Men drank of it Along-side, and that they could not go up much higher for Falls of Fresh Water.

II.

I know no more of this than relating to the Water's being Fresh, which every one of the Boat's Crew that were up in the Boat drank of

lection of Water over the Island to the Northward of them, with Broken Lands to the Westward, as high as the Lands at the Cape of *Good Hope*; and whether the Master who went much higher up upon the Mountains did not over-look all the Islands in the Main Channel, and saw a large Passage or Strait 4 or 5 Leagues wide beyond them, the Channel Course bearing directly S. W. with high Lands on each Side, all thereabouts appearing to be Broken Lands, the whole Channel being free from Ice, or any thing to obstruct their going farther? whether he did not find the Water salt there, and upon his Return to the Boat was desirous of proceeding farther, but the Lieutenant having already exceeded his Orders durst not go any farther.

III.

Whether the Captain did not limit them to go only to *Deer Sound* or thereabouts, and come

D 3

III.

Whether the Captain limited them or no, I know nothing of; we did propose to Sail as he had done

Robert
ry.

s.

the Boat
ver, but
urned on
Furnace,
from her
to write
s Logg-
utenant
ount that
kelihood
at Way,
but a
our Men
of the
clared the
esh after
up two
e *Deer*
the Men
ng-side,
ould not
gher fo:
ater.

e of this
Water's
ch every
rew that
at drank
of

back with the utmost dispatch, the Nature of the Service would allow of, and whether after Sailing about 15 Leagues farther and giving him a Return under their Hands, that there was another Passage into the Sea, besides that the Ships went in at; the Captain did not immediately prepare to sail out of the River without proceeding upon the Discovery, and sailed out of the River to the North Eastward the 4th of *August*.

done for above 15 Days before; always ordered both Ships to be in Readiness, to sail as soon as possible we could get out for Ice, to prosecute the Discovery, and meet the Flood Tides.

IV.

Whether there were not many large black Whales above *Deer Sound* in that Passage; and whether they saw any Whales below, or at the Entrance or without *Wager River*, either in the Strait or Bay above *Cape Hope*, or in any other Part of the Bay or Straits of *Hudson*, except on the N. W. Side near *Brook Cobham*, and whether they believed those Whales came in from the East or West-end of *Wager River* or

IV.

I saw one Whale in the *Welcome*, pretty near the Entrance of the *River Wager*, and one Seahorse, and several Seals, but had not the Opportunity of seeing any up the *River Wager*; being all the time we were there on board of the *Discovery Pink*, but never heard of any being seen higher up than *Deer Sound*, by any that was in the Boat. It was every Body's Opinion that I talked with, that those Whales came all in Straits,

Straits, and whether in their own Judgment they did not think that there might be a Passage from thence to the South Westward ?

from the Eastward from the frozen Straits, as also that *Wager River* was nothing but a River, and that Whales could come into it no other Way than where the Ships entered.

V.

Whether they believe that the Captain would have sent them up at that time, if he had not been alarmed, upon hearing that it was rumour'd among his Men, that the Discovery was neglected; tho' from the Whales, Depth and Breadth of the Strait, there were Hopes of a Passage, and whether there were not some high Words upon it, and harsh Words used by the Captain, that he would Cane some and Broomstick and lash others, if they reported any thing, or concerned themselves about the Success of the Voyage.

V.

It is my sincere Belief, that Captain *Middleton* had the Discovery at Heart more than any Thing in this World; neither did I ever hear of any Threatnings made use of by Capt. *Middleton* to either of the Ship's Company, nor did any one feel any of its Effects, but he was always Kind and Civil to all, and would inform and instruct every Body concerning the Discovery, and Navigation, or any thing else who ever would learn.

VI.

Whether when the Lieutenant and Master were carried out of the River by the Rapidity of

VI.

I know no more of this than they were in great Danger of losing the Boat and themselves among the

the Tide, upon a large Piece of Ice, they were not carried by the Ebb to the South Westward close by the Rocks, around *Cape Dobbs*, and whether the Ebb did not run by that Cape to the South-westward.

mong the Ice, and strong Tide, that sat them out of the River's Mouth, but far short of *Cape Dobbs* by all former Accounts.

VII.

Whether when the Ships failed out of the River, they did not ply to the North-eastward with Sails and Oars to be out of the Way of the Tide of Flood from the Southward upon its Return, lest it should force them again up the River.

VII.

The Master's Answer to this Query in the setting of the Tide, &c. is very just.

VIII.

Whether the Captain did not order the Lieutenant on Shore at the low Beach at half an Hour after two, when they were 4 Miles from the Shore, and at three made a Signal for him to return on Board, before he reached the Shore or could fix the Current of the Tide,

VIII.

This I know nothing of, being at some Distance a-stern of the *Fur-nace* at that time.

Whether

IX.

Whether the Neap Tides were not higher at *Churchill*, with a North-westerly Wind, than the Spring Tides were with an Easterly Wind?

IX.

The Neap Tides at *Churchill*, as the old Standers there say, riseth higher with the Wind at North, and to the Eastward of it, than the Spring Tides do with a South and S. W Wind, but we had not much Tryal at Spring and Fall, having no hard Gales at those Seasons when we were there.

X.

Whether the Tide at the Point near *Brook Cobham* in $63^{\circ} 20'$ nigh the Land, as they went Northward from *Churchill*, was not as rapid as the Tide in the River *Wager*; or whether at that time they could ascertain the Flood from the Ebb; and whether by falling off from the Land to the Eastward, they did not lose that Tide?

X.

I am surprized the Lieutenant shou'd prove himself so ignorant, as to say the Tide near *Brook Cobham* should be as rapid, as the Tide in *Wager* River, where there is not the least Comparison; and I am, sure none that I ever sailed with to Sea, I ever saw took the Pains as the Captain did in Tides and all other Observations; the Current Log was always in Use in trying the Tides whenever it cou'd be done, without Loss of Time, as I have both heard and seen,

Whether

XI.

Whether it did not appear by the Gunners and Carpenters Account, who went farther than the Captain and Clerk by two or three Miles, when they landed at Cape *Frigid*, that they were upon an Island cut off from the low Beach; and that the frozen Strait which they saw, was what surrounded that Island, which was not above three Leagues wide and full of Islands? And whether they did not see high Land beyond that Strait to the Eastward, and so round to the low Beach? And whether they could see a Strait over that high Land, at least 15 Leagues farther to the S. E. without a Telescope? And whether upon his Return to the Boat at low Water he did not then take the Height of the Tide.

XII.

Whether upon their Return from Cape *Frigid* to Brook *Cobham*, they

XI.

This I know nothing of.

XII.

On our Return from Cape *Frigid* to Brook *Cobham*, we were sometimes

were within such a Distance of the West Land, as to descry the Bottom of the Bays, or Inlets, so as to know it to be a main Land? Whether it was not for the most part hazy Weather; so as only to descry the Tops of the Mountains and Headlands? And whether they did not pass a great part in the Night, or were even nearer the Coast than five or six Leagues, until they came near Brook Cobham, where they saw many Whales.

times two, three, and four Leagues from the Shore, but not often much further. Its true, at Night we lay'd the Ships to, that we might pass by no Place undiscovered that appeared like Openings; and sometimes we ply'd to Windward to hold our own till clear Weather and Day-light, but saw no Appearance of any Openings, all along from the furthest we went to Brook Cobham, excepting Wager River, and the frozen Straits. All the West side, main Land and very high.

XIII.

Whether the Captain ever once sent his Boat on Shore to try the Tides or search for any Inlet upon that Coast, until he watered at Marble Island upon his Return to England; where the Master discovered a Tide, which sometimes rose 22 Feet? And whether when he desired again to go on Shore to make further Observations, the Captain did

XIII.

I know nothing of this Query, nor ever heard of it before. Only I know, the Boats were several times ashore for Water from both Ships.

not

not prevent him, and refuse him Liberty? And whether during the whole Voyage from *Churchill* until their Return, they had not good Weather to make a thorough Discovery.

XIV.

Whether this neglect was not after having owned in Council that they had found rapid Tides, broken Lands and Islands upon that Coast as they sailed Northwards from *Churchill*, but had no Opportunity of knowing from whence the Tides came.

XV.

Whether there were any Signs of the *Eskimaux* Indians having ever been at Cape *Frigid*? And whether they had not Marks of their having been every where above *Savage* Sound to the Westward in *Wager* River? And since they have all their Necessaries from the Whales they kill, if any number had pass'd a

XIV.

I never heard of any Neglect, nor will I believe any can be justly charged to him; I saw Capt. *Middleton* always upon Deck whenever the Ship was under Way, and I could be so near as to see and distinguish a Man on board the *Furnace*.

XV.

I was not ashore at Cape *Frigid*, nor at any great distance from the Ship in *Wager* River.

Strait near Cape *Frigid*?
 whether in so narrow a
 Strait it had not been a
 better place for those
 Indians to have killed
 Whales than in *Wager*
 River, in case they came
 in from thence, and not
 from the Westward.

XVI.

Whether the Lieut. did
 not press the Captain to
 take a Man from *Church-*
ill Factory, who under-
 stood perfectly the nor-
 thern Indian Language;
 and that he would take
 the Blame upon himself,
 in case any Complaint
 should be made upon
 his Return, since it
 would be of so great
 Service to promote the
 Discovery; but the Capt.
 would not allow of it?

XVII.

Whether the rapid
 Tides near *Brook Cobbam*,
 and from the Number of
 Whales seen there, they
 did not apprehend there
 might also have been a
 Passage thereabouts, and
 whether by the best Ac-

XVI.

This I can say nothing
 to; never heard of it
 before.

XVII.

I never heard of any
 rapid Tides near *Brook*
Cobbam, as I mentioned
 before; I heard it was
 tried several Times along
 that Coast, and ran about
 two Knots, which is no
 more than common, nei-
 ther

counts they could get from the *Indians* by the Interpreter they had, they did not intimate that the Strait and Copper-Mine they had been at, where they saw a great many large black Fish, was somewhere thereabouts, before they fell in with Ice? And whether the Captain did not threaten the Surgeon, upon Account of his being so intimate and corresponding with the *Indians*, and for his attempting to come at the Knowledge of that Strait and Passage from them.

ther did I apprehend that any Body could think or surmise a Passage, without it was over Land, for as I said before, there was no Appearance of any thing like it, or a River, but all main Land and very high; neither did I hear of any Threatnings, Copper-Mine, or Straits, or black Fish, or Passage, before I read it in Captain *Middleton's* Defence; if any such Thing had been surely I should have heard of it at the *Orkneys*, when we were on board of the *Furnace*, and their Officers on board of us homeward. This must be all Forgery,—and by those that do not know a Rope in the Ship, or their Compass, and newly trump'd up.

XVIII.

Whether the two Northern *Indians* were not desirous of coming to *England*, and were not, contrary to their Inclinations, put on Shore in an Island in 63^d Degrees, some Leagues from the

XVIII.

The *Indians* Inclinations I am a Stranger to, as I believe the Gentlemen on board were; the Boat they had for their Use was a very good one, and I heard they were highly pleased when they came

Main, in an indifferent Boat, which they could not rightly manage, their Enemies being upon the Coast, and they far from their own Country.

on Shore with the many fine Things they had received from Captain *Middleton*, as well they might, for I heard our Men as also the *Furnace's* say, that they knew, they had more Goods than they could have traded in 7 Years, and they were not above 2 Leagues from the Island to the main Land, and several small Islands, between which I could see from the Mast's-head in the Road where we lay.

XIX.

Whether the Lieutenant, Surgeon and Clerk did not hear the Captain say at *Churchill*, to the Governor and Officers of the *Hudson's Bay Company*, that he shou'd be able to make that Voyage, and no Man on board him should know whether there was a Passage or not; and that he would be a better Friend to the Company than ever.

XIX.

This I never heard a Word of before.

XX.

Whether his Conduct was not suitable to that Declaration afterwards upon the Discovery, by

XX.

This I have answered in Query the 5th and 14th, from my own Knowledge. I forgot one

discouraging and discouraging every one on Board from being inquisitive about it, or making any Observations which promoted the Discovery; threatening to take their Books and Papers from them; and being very careful that nothing should be entred into the Log-Book which could give any hopes of a Passage, but barely the common Occurrences on Board the Ship which related to the sailing of the Ship, and Winds, Soundings, &c.

one Thing in Query the 5th, which is this, That the People were far from rumouring, but were overjoyed to hear when we were returning from our farthest; on the Account of their bad State of Health, and Hardships they underwent on Board of both Ships. And I do sincerely believe, that Captain *Middleton*, had the Discovery more at heart than any Body that was concerned in it; and as Mr. *Wilson* has justly said, He that represents him in any other Light, I am thoroughly satisfied, it is doing him great Injustice.

This may be observed as very material in answer to Mr. *Dobbs* making *Wager* River a Strait of Salt Water; as it did not appear from any Accounts, or Reports, that one Whale was seen above *Deer* Sound, where the Water was fresh; and several were seen below and without the Mouth of *Wager* River: And from four Leagues above *Savage* Sound, quite down to the Entrance of the River, was seen every where Storehouses of Oil, Whalebone, and Blubber, on the North Side, and none seen above, where the Water was fresh or brackish, is a certainty of its being a River; and no Whales come into fresh Water, or could any come from the West End of *Wager* River, the above Reason, will I think amount to a Demonstration to all reasonable Men.

Sept. 15, 1743.

Robert Carew.

Extract from Lieutenant RANKIN'S
 JOURNAL of remarkable Obser-
 vations, &c.

From July 1 ; to August 15, 1742. in-
 cluded.

July 1, 1742.

THE first Part moderate Gales and fair
 Weather. At 4 P. M. fired a Gun, a
 Signal to weigh. *Ditto* hove short; the
 River, all clear of Ice. At $\frac{1}{2}$ past *ditto* weighed, at 9
ditto got out of *Churchill* Harbour. *Ditto* I went ashore
 with a Pacquet for *England*. *Ditto* sent a Cable and
 Anchor on board the Tender that we had to moore
 with, our Anchor being broke. At 11 *ditto* I returned
 on board. *Ditto* got the Boat in and bore away,
New Fort bore S. W. Distance 3 Leagues, founded
 from 20, 24, 25, and 26 Fathoms Water, the Mid-
 dle and latter Part fresh Gales and hazy.

July 2, 1742.

Fresh Gales and hazy. At 10 A. M. shortned
 Sail for the Tender. *Ditto* in first Reef, both Top-
 sails. *Ditto* founded 43 Fathoms, rocky Ground.
 At 2 A. M. founded 54 to 50 Fathoms Water.
Ditto set Foresale. At 5 *Ditto* made 3 Islands in the
 Lat. $61^{\circ} 40'$ N. the Westermost bore N. W. by N.
 the Eastermost, N. by W. Distance 3 Leagues, found-
 ed 27 Fathoms. At 8 *Ditto* founded 43 Fathoms
 soft Clay Ground. At Noon 45 Fathoms, soft
 Ground. *Ditto* up Forefail for the Tender.

July 3, 1742.

Moderate Gales and hazy. At 8 *A. M.* bore down two *Glasses*, to the Tender, sounded 52 Fathoms. *Ditto* fired a Gun for *ditto*. At 10 *ditto* wet Foggs. *Ditto* fired 4 Guns for the Tender. At 12 *ditto* sounded 43 Fathoms, *ditto* fired 2 Guns for *ditto*. At 1 *A. M.* tack'd, sounded 38 Fathoms, *ditto* fired 3 Guns. At 2 *ditto* fired 4 Guns for the Tender. At 4 *ditto* sounded 43 to 49 Fathoms, *ditto* fired 4 Guns for the Tender. At 6 *ditto* saw the Land and an Island from N. by E. to E. by N. the East End of *ditto* bore N. E. The West End of *ditto* N. by W. the nearest Distance 4 Leagues. At 10 *ditto* tack'd, 15 Fathoms stony Ground, Distance 5 or 6 Miles off Shore, this Island is what Capt. *Fox* called *Brook Cobbam*, and is about 8 Leagues long and 3 broad pretty bold and good Soundings near it, lay near N. W. and S. E. by Compass. *Ditto* always much Snow on it.

July 4, 1742.

The first Part little Winds inclinable to Calms. At 2 *P. M.* *Brook Cobbam* bore N. E. by E. Distance 4 or 5 Leagues, sounded 25, 29, 31, and 34 Fathoms Water. At 6 *ditto* the East-end of *ditto* Island bore N. E. Distance 7 or 8 Leagues. At 12 *ditto* out 1st Reef of both Topails, the middle and latter Part moderate Gales and fair Weather, *ditto* sounded 45, 46 Fathoms, Soundings to Noon from 52 to 57 Fathoms. At 10 *A. M.* bore down to the Tender, 5 *Glasses*.

July

on board his Majesty's Ship Furnace, &c. 67

July 5, 1742.

The first Part little Winds and fair. At 8 *A. M.* fresh Gales and squally, *ditto* in first Reef both Top-sails. At $\frac{1}{2}$ past 8 *ditto* tack'd, *ditto* fired a Gun for the Tender, *ditto* sounded 75 Fathoms, the middle and latter Part moderate Gales and hazy with a great Swell from the Eastward. At 3 *A. M.* saw a Head-land on the North-side of the *Welcome*, bore N. W. by N. Distance 7 or 8 Leagues in 70 Fathoms, *ditto* out * reef both Top-sails, we tried the Tide, found it run 2 Miles an Hour from N. E. by E. by Compass, one Day before the Change or Full Moon, I take it to be the Flood from the Eastward, but have not been ashore to try the Tide, *ditto* 23 Fathoms 3 Leagues off Shore.

July 6, 1742.

Moderate Gales and hazy Sounding from 42 to 35 Fathoms. At $\frac{1}{2}$ past 2 *P. M.* tack'd the Eastermost Part of the Head-land in sight, bore N. by E. § Distance 5 or 6 Leagues, *ditto* working along Shore, *ditto* the Flood from the N. E. by N. and Ebb from S. W. by S. At $\frac{1}{2}$ past 2, tack'd, Soundings from 23 to 33 Fathoms. At 8 *ditto* the Island of *Brook Cobham* bore W. by S. Distance 9 Leagues. At 10 *ditto* the Eastermost Part of the Head-land bore N. W. Distance 4 or 5 Leagues, sounded from 60 to 78 Fathoms. At 5 *A. M.* tack'd in 78 Fathoms Water.

* This contradicts his Answer to Query 10, where he says, *the Tide at the Point near Brook Cobham in 63°. 20'. nigh the Land was as rapid as that in Wager River. N. B. Mr. Dobbs, the Tide in Wager River ran from 6 to 9 Miles an Hour. Moore's Answer to Query 11, Remarks, says, the Tide in the said River ran above 7 Knets.*

§ This contradicts Mr. *Dobbs* and the Lieutenant's Western Tide near *Brook Cobham*.

July 7, 1742.

Moderate Gales and foggy. At 2 P. M. shortned Sail for the Tender, founding from 60 to 90 Fathoms. At 10 fired a Gun for the Tender, *ditto* tack'd. At $\frac{1}{2}$ past 1 A. M. tack'd, *ditto* fired a Gun. We have tried the Tides several times since we left *Brook Cobham*, and find little or no Tide, but that may be owing to the Distance of the Land as we find in other Places, we have seen no Whale as yet.

July 8, 1742.

Little Wind inclinable to Calms and hazy Weather. At 6 P. M. saw a large Ledge of Ice to the Northward of us, founded 82 and 83 Fathoms. At 12 *ditto* tack'd, *ditto* founded 83 to 88 Fathoms. At 4 A. M. saw the North-side of the *Welcome* and much Ice in Shore the nearest of the Land N. W. Distance 7 or 8 Leagues. At 8 *ditto* tried the Tides set E. N. E. 2 Fathoms. At Noon the Westermost Land on the North-side N. W. the Eastermost N. E. nearest Distance 7 or 8 Leagues, founded 57 Fathoms, *ditto* exercised small Arms sailing along Shore at 5 Leagues Distance.

July 9, 1742.

Moderate Gales, and fair Weather. At 2 P. M. altered the Course, *ditto* sailing along a Ledge of Ice, *ditto* fired a Gun and shortned Sail, *ditto* 38 Fathom in Sight of the North Shore. At 6 *ditto* made Sail, the Tender being come up with us, founded 43 to 54 Fathom, the Westermost Land in Sight from W. N. W. to N. E. by E. the nearest Distance 7 Leagues. At 4 A. M. Past much Ice. *Ditto* 68 Fathom. *Ditto* saw the East Side of the *Welcome*, S. by E. to the N. E. by E. the nearest Distance 4 Leagues, a low even Land, the West-side bore at the same time from W. N. W. to N. in Sight, the Distance 7 or 8 Leagues, so the *Welcome*

on board his Majesty's Ship Furnace, &c. 69

come is 11 or 12 Leagues broad, here Soundings 44, 45, 47, 37, 35, 37 and 44 Fathoms Water, *ditto* entred a Ledge of Ice sailing among it: At 12 *ditto* very thick Foggs, lay too for the Tender, fired a Gun, founded 74 Fathoms; we find good Soundings along both Shores; at 3 or 4 Leagues Distance we find but little or no Tide here on the Shore, we are fast jammed up with Ice, no Opportunity to get on Shore to try the Height of the Tides, it's full of Ice from Side to Side.

July 10, 1742.

Fresh Gales and foggy Weather, up S. E. by S. off E. S. E. At $\frac{1}{2}$ past 12 P. M. the Fog cleared up a little; made sail toward the North Shore among the Ice, very much Ice all round, founded 65 Fathoms, tried the Tide, set N. E. by E. one Mile *per Hour*. At 4 *ditto* made a Signal to grapple to the Ice, *ditto* fired 2 Guns. At 5 *ditto* grappled both Ships to a large Piece of Ice, to keep off Shore, the Wind blowing on the South-side. At 8 *ditto* set the Land on both Sides of the *Welcome*, the East Shore or South from S. S. E. round to the N. E. by E. the West or North Shore, from the West to the North, the nearest Distance 6 or 7 Leagues, the South-side Distance 5 Leagues the nearest; filled all our Water Casks. At 8 A. M. got down Top gallant Yards; Soundings from 45 to 55. I find here on this South-side neither the Flood nor Ebb runs, by often Tryal with our Current-Logg. Our Way made by driving in the Ice with the Wind, allowing the Variation is N. E. about 15 Miles, so hazy we cannot see the West Shore, the East Shore, is from S. by W. to the N. E. by E. in Sight, we drive E. N. E. by Compass, and are not above 3 Leagues from the Eastern Shore, but hope the Ice will fill between us, and it will prevent our being on Shore, for we are not able to help our selves until the Winds shift or Calm.

July 11, 1742.

Fresh Gales and Rain with wet Foggs. At 2 P. M. the Current set N. E. by E. 4 Fathoms, sounding 47 to 54. At 8 A. M. the Tide set N. N. E. 4 Fathoms. At 10 *ditto* the Tide set E. 6 Fathoms sounded 28 Fathoms Water. At 12 Calm, the Ice opened as it usually doth, we warp'd off from the Shore, by carrying out Grapplings from Piece to Piece of Ice, the Tender did the same; our Drift since Noon last, by Account, has been N. E. when the Variation is allowed 15 Miles, we are using all Means possible to get off the Shore, the Tide setting constantly to the Eastward, we shall endeavour to get over towards the *Whalebone* Point to try for a Strait or Passage, as soon as Ice and Wind will favour us, we were drove within 2 Miles of the Shore before we began to warp off.

July 12, 1742.

Moderate Gales and hazy, continue warping and setting through among the Ice with our Poles being quite calm, got up Top gallant Yards. At 6 P. M. set sail rowing and setting open the Ice and towing with our Boat. At 9 *ditto* grappled to stop for our Tender 5 Miles off Shore, this East Side lieth N. N. E. and S. S. W. a low even Land. At 11 cast off our Grapplings and made sail the Tender coming up with us. At 2 P. M. grappled to a large Piece, a thick Fog coming on, sent our Boat to help the Tender to the same. At 4 A. M. got her fast to *ditto* Ice, foggy, 39 Fathoms, driving N. E. 2 Fathoms. At $\frac{1}{2}$ past 7 cast off our Grapplings; cleared up a little, made one Warp and set sail. By 8 the Ice opened towards the North Shore. At 10 sailing among shattered Ice over for the North Shore, sounded 43 Fathoms $\frac{1}{2}$ way between the two Shores. At 12, sounded 49, 48, and 46 grey Sand and Shells,
some

on board his Majesty's Ship Furnace, &c. 71

some Stones; a fair Head-land on the North Shore bore S. W. by W. At Noon a fair Point of Land appeared to the Northward of *Whalebone Point* bore S. W. by W. the Eastermost Land on *ditto* Shore N. E. nearest Distance 4 Leagues, Latitude $65^{\circ} 10'$. N. Longitude from the Meridian of *London* $88^{\circ} 6'$ West; which we call *C. Dobbs* after the Honourable *Arthur Dobbs*, Esq; of *Castle Dobbs* in *Ireland*, and are now standing in for a fair Inlet or Strait that makes a fair Opening from us, but not very wide, to secure our Ships from the Ice, in the *Welcome*, being in no Safety there among the Ice, nor can proceed farther until the Ice is gone or must be forced to go back again, out of the *Welcome*.

July 13, 1742.

Moderate Gales and fair Weather. At 2 P. M. *Cape Dobbs* bore S. W. by S. 7 or 8 Leagues Distance, the Easternmost Land on the North Side of the Opening E. N. E. that makes this Bay 9 or 10 Leagues broad; the Entrance of the River N. W. by W. 4 Leagues from us running in for the River among sailing Ice. Lay too one Glas for the Tender, having ordered her to lie too or stand off until we could make the River, and then if we went in, to follow us. At 6 made the Signal for the Tender to come in. At 10 P. M. almost calm, much Ice, driving; the Boat a towing and rowing of the Ship to get out of the Ice to anchor in some Place. At 12 *ditto* anchored on the North Shore within some Islands to stop the Tide in 34 Fathoms; very much Ice driving down with the Tide of Ebb, we steered all the Tide with a whole Cable, clear of all the large Pieces of Ice, with all Hands fending off with Ice-poles. At 10 A. M. I went with the eight oar'd Boat to sound and search the River for a Place where we might lie in Safety, to ride clear of the Driving of the Ice, the Soundings as we entered the River

were no less than 16 Fathoms, and most of the way from 16 Fathoms to 20, 30, 40, and 50, Fathoms, there were several Rocks that we passed over, being High Water, the Land is very high on both Sides, as any in *England*, the Tide is much easier where we anchored, it runs about 2 Miles an Hour.

July 14, 1742.

Moderate Gales and fair Weather. At 4 P. M. weighed our best Bower Anchor and got into a better Road within some Islands that we found; our best Bower Anchor Arm broke off, we went about 4 Miles higher up, and anchored in a Sound between some Islands and the North Main in 16 Fathoms Water; moored with our broken Anchor and small Bower near those Islands, the Tender got in to anchor by us, much Ice continued driving past us, and heavy Pieces came foul of us, but the Tide ran but little here: More Eddy than Tide. Drew the Splice of the best Bower Cable and shifted him from the Starboard to the Larboard Side, several *Esquimaux* came on board of us; we gave them Toys, but they had nothing to trade except it was their old Clothes, and a little Train Oil. At 7 A. M. I went up the River with the eight oar'd Boat mann'd and arm'd, with 3 Indians and Provisions for 48 Hours, to discover the River and observe the Course of the Tides at High and Low Water. I found the Indians knew nothing of the Country as I went up the River.

July 15, 1742.

Fresh Gales and cloudy, *ditto* employed in serving our Cables from being cut with the Ice; set our Fishing-Nets but got no Fish among those Islands, where we lay, or Rocks; found them quite bare, except in some few Places in the Valleys a little short Grass and Moss, a little Scurvy-Grass near the High-Water-Mark among the Stones, also some Sorrel which

on board his Majesty's Ship Furnace, &c. 73

which was brought on board for our sick Men. *Ditto* fresh Gales at E. S. E. this Wind has drove the Ice out of the *Welcome* into the River and filled it quite full. Many of our Men are very bad with the Scurvy, their old Distemper; those that were on recovery when we came from *Churchill* have grown worse again, so that we have not * half of them serviceable.

July 16, 1742.

Fresh Gales and Squally. At 3 P. M. got down our Top Gallant Yards. At 10 *ditto*, Squally, lower'd down our lower Yard, and got the Boat up in our Tackles. At 4 A. M. more moderate, got up our lower Yards, cleared the Decks. At 6 loosed the Sails to dry. I find the Tide floweth here on Change Days at the Mouth of the River 5 Hours, and from 10 to 15 Foot, the Flood without comes from the East by Compass, the Course of the Land, but in the Middle of the Channel E. N. E. § by *ditto*. We found a good Cove near the Shore with 10 or 12 Fathom Water in it, about 2 Miles from where we lay, to secure our Ships from the Ice, before the Spring Tides come on, where we now lye, we are obliged to keep all Hands up, all the Ebb, with Poles for sending off the Ice to secure our Cables.

July 17, 1742.

Moderate Gales and Fair Weather. At 1 P. M. I returned with the Boat and 3 *Indians*, having been up the River as far as the Ice would permit me, all

* This contradicts the Surgeon's Answer to Query 13. p. 182. *Vindication*, where he says, we had not above 8 Men incapable of doing their Duty, out of 53 Men and Boys, and never Wanted a Boat's Crew on any Emergency.

§ This contradicts his Answer to Query 6 before the Lords of the Admiralty, in which he says, he was carried to the Southward nigh the Rocks on the South Shore of *Cape Dobbs*, by the Tide of Ebb. But the Master to the same Query says, they were carried S. E. by S. as the Course of the Land lies by Compass.

above

74 *Remarkable Observations, &c.*

above being fast from * Side to Side, I found good Soundings in the Channel 70 or 80 Fathom soft Ground. I likewise tried the Tides, and found the Flood came from the South, the Tide flowed 13 Foot it being Neap Tides; I went upon the highest Land to have as fair a Prospect as possible with the *Indians*, but they knew nothing of those Parts of the Country. At 6 *A. M.* the Captain went with the Boat and 8 Hands to see what Discovery he could make with the two Northern *Indians*; *Ditto* made a Signal to unmoor; *ditto* unmoor'd and warp'd the Ship into the Cove; that it broke the Arm of the *Discovery's* Kedge Anchor warping in; *ditto* set the Forefall: A small Breeze of Wind.

July 18, 1742.

Little Winds and fair Weather. At 2 *P. M.* came to with our best Bower Anchor in the Cove, and 9 Fathom Water. *Ditto* moor'd between 4, and at 8 *ditto* sent the Master with 8 Men to get the *Discovery* into the Cove, and moor'd her by us; *ditto* served all our Hawfers and Cables to prevent their being cut by the Ice. At 6 *A. M.* scraped our Sides for Tar. I find that up the River a West Moon makes full Sea, the Flood comes in at the Mouth of the River, where we come in from the S. S. E. *Ditto* the *Indians* killed a small Deer, where the Captain lay all Night; *ditto* heard several of the Savages in the Night making uncommon crying, as they always do when they see any Stranger, but none came near him.

July 19, 1742.

Moderate Gales and Hazy. At 4 *P. M.* paid the Ship's Sides with Tar, the Captain went up the River about 24 Miles from the Ship to a Sound, that

* This contradicts *Moor's* Answer to Query 12, who says, there was not Ice to hinder our going over.

on board his Majesty's Ship Furnace, &c. 75

is about 6 or 7 Miles broad, but how far it goes in Land we do not know; the Main River is in breadth here 6 or 7 * Leagues, but so full of Ice § we can't get much farther at present; all very high Land on both Sides this River; it runs about N. by W. it appears at about 8 or 10 Leagues Higher to grow Narrower, but being so full of Ice he could not go much farther.

July 20, 1742.

Moderate Gales and Hazy. Employed in over-hawling the Rigging: Much Ice driving up and down the River with the Tide. At 5 A. M. Employed our Hands with Boats and Ice Poles, in clearing our Moorings. At 8 P. M. the Captain returned and brought 6 Deer on Board with him which the two *Indians* killed. At 7 A. M. scraped the Masts: *Ditto* the Captain went down the River to see if he could find a Place or Harbour to secure the Ships near the Mouth of the River, if we should be taken short in going down, and to see if the *Wellcome* is now clear of Ice: Part of the Deer was given to the Tender, some served out to our Sick Men, over and above their Allowance, what was very strange, in all their Sickness, even a Day or two before they died they would eat their whole Allowance, and a great deal more if they had it. He found the Land in many Places bare, hardly any thing but Rocks of a Marble Kind, but between the Vales there is many Lakes, and Grass Plenty: There is Plenty of Deer upon the least Island; we saw 5 or 6, and it is not half a Mile round, they are as large as a small Horse 12 or 13 Hands high; many Ducks, and other Water Fowls; some black Whale we saw

* Contrary to what is in his Report of the 16th of July, where the Breadth is 12 or 13. *Vide* Appendix following, p. 19, but this again, since my Vindication has been printed, is altered to 6 or 7 Leagues.

§ *Moore* is here again contradicted as to the Ice.

76 *Remarkable Observations, &c.*

in this Sound; we named it *Deer Sound*, after the Plenty of Deer we found there.

July 21, 1742.

Moderate Gales and Fair Weather. The People employed in mending the Quarter Nettings. At 4 *A. M.* the Captain came on Board with the Boat, being in great Danger of Staving her; the River and Cove being so very full of Ice, and strong Tides below, there is no getting out 'till the Ice is clear in the River, also in the Bay or *Wellcome*, yet very full; was down within 4 Miles of the River's Mouth, and from off the high Land could see the other Side of the *Wellcome*, all was full from Side to Side. § At 11 *A. M.* I went up the River in the Boat with 3 *Indians* to make what Discovery I could.

July 22, 1742.

Little Winds with some Showers of Rain. At 6 *A. M.* hung our spare Sails to Air: At 8 *Ditto* got up our Top Gallant Yards; *Ditto* got up all the Chests and Hammocks, and clean'd the Gun Deck, the Ice continues very Thick in the River as far as we can see above and below, driving in and out from the *Wellcome*.

July 23, 1742.

Moderate Gales and Hazy, with Showers of small Rain. The River is fuller of Ice than it has been yet; no venturing with the Boat in the River to go downwards.

July 24, 1742.

Fresh Gales, with much Rain. At 6 *A. M.* I returned with the Boat, the River being full of Ice, with the Northern *Indians*, having been 25 Leagues or better up the River; and seeing many large
§ *Moor* a third time contradicted.

on board his Majesty's Ship Furnace, &c. 77

Whales of the Whale-bone Kind, finding deep Water all the Way, no Ground 67 Fathom; I found several Islands in the Middle, with 30 Fathom Water close along Side of them†: I saw a Fall or a Fresh on the West Side of them; I went to the Top of the highest Mountain I could see, and saw a very high mountainous Land on both Sides of the River away to Westward.

July 25, 1742.

Little Winds and Hazy. *Ditto* found the Stock of our best Bower Anchor broke by the Ice grounding upon it in 4 Fathom Water, the same Anchor that was broke in the Arm before, so being quite Useless sent it on Board the Tender. At 10 A. M. I went down the River with the 8 oar'd Boat, and the Master, to observe if the Ice was any clearer below in the *Wellcome*, and if we could get out before the Spring Tides put in, and if I could find any Cove or Harbour at the Entrance of the River for the Ships. *Ditto* got one of the *Discovery's* Anchors for our Use, which was very much bent at *Churchill*.

July 26, 1742.

Moderate Gales and Hazy. At 6 A. M. stock'd the Anchor we mention'd before, 7 Hundred $\frac{3}{4}$ Weight: The River continued very full of Ice, as far as we can see. The Longitude of this Savage Bay, where we now lye from the Meridian of London $89^{\circ} 28'$ West; and to the Eastward of *Churchill* River is $38^{\circ} 00'$ East, the Variation of the Compass by Observation $35^{\circ} 00'$ West; Latitude of the Entrance of this River *Wager* $65^{\circ} 23'$ North; the Entrance of *Deer Sound*, Latitude $65^{\circ} 50'$ North; Course by Compass from *Savage Bay* up to the said Sound is N. by W. Distance 24 Miles.

† Here is no mention made of Mr. *Dobbs's* spacious Straits leading away to the S. W. yet this is the Place from whence they were seen by the Lieutenant in his additional Account, p. 62, 63. Remarks.

Moderate



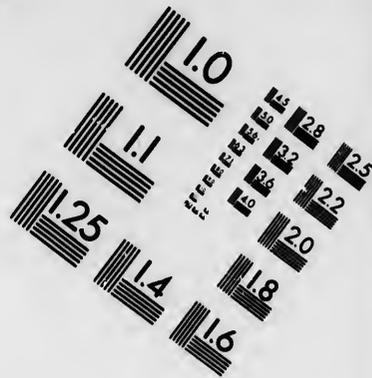
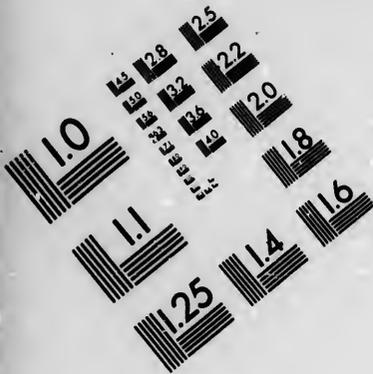
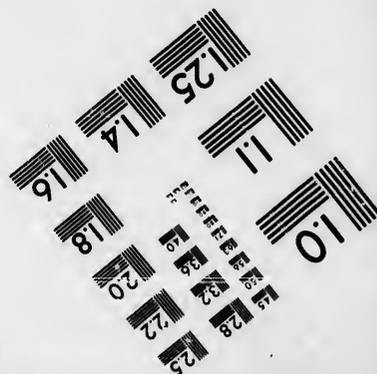
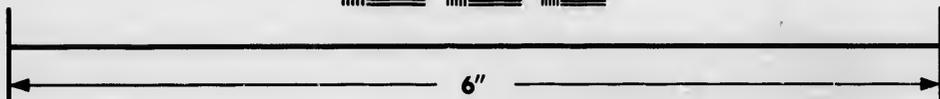
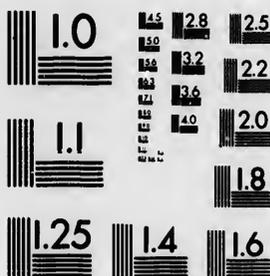


IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)



Photographic
Sciences
Corporation

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503

1.5 1.8 2.0 2.2 2.5
2.8 3.2 3.6 4.0

5.0 5.6 6.3 7.1 8.0
9.0 10.0

July 27, 1742.

Moderate Gales and Hazy. Haul'd up the Sheet Cable, and got our Stream Cable to Hand for the above Anchor. At 9 I returned with our Boat and the Master, found the River entirely choak'd below, and the *Welcome* very full of Ice; I was in great Danger of losing the Boat as well as our Lives, but fortunately got her into a small Cove upon a large Cake of Ice, where the Ice suddenly closed upon me, hurried me on by the Force of the Tide along Side of the Rocks, where many large Pieces were canted up against the Rock with horrible Noise, that forced me out of the River into the *Welcome* a matter of † 7 or 8 Leagues, and in the Strength of the Tide many of the largest Pieces overfet one upon another, when we got out into the *Welcome* so far as the Tide was easy, and the Ice opened, we row'd to the North Shore, and got up to the Ship the next Flood: At Noon got our spare Sails to Air.

July 28, 1742.

Moderate Gales and Fair Weather. At one P. M. I went with the Master in a 6 Oar'd Boat, with 2 *Indians*, up the River, to try if I could find any Way out of it into the *Welcome* besides where we came in, on Account they have seen many black Whale when up the River, and none to be seen where we lye, or any where below, and to try *Deer Sound*, and every Opening, to see if the Flood came in from any other Way: At 6 A. M. sent our Boat with 8 of our Sick, and several Lame with the Scurvy, to an Island about 5 Miles off, having Plenty of Scurvy Grass and Sorrel there: Common Tides flow here 12 Foot 6 Inches, and have not found 15 Foot the highest Tide.

† Here is no Mention of his being carried round *Cape Dobbs*, neither is it taken notice of in his Report of the 27th July, *Vide* Appendix, p. 23.

Moderate

July 29, 1742.

Moderate Gales and Fair Weather. The Captain every Day the Time that I was gone went to the Top of the highest Hill to observe whether the River was any clearer of Ice, but found it all full below, but a little thinner above, and where we lay. The Tide flowed this Day 13 Foot High Water at 10^o Clock.

July 30, 1742.

Little Winds and variable Weather. At $\frac{1}{2}$ past 1 P. M. Tide flowed 12 Foot, 8 Inches. At 2 A. M. 13. 6. At 8 got on Board our head Anchor, ready to get out of the Cove, the Ice pretty thin without in the Sound; the Captain went out upon the highest Hill as usual to see how the Ice was without, and found it all fast for 8 or 10 Miles above, and as far as he could see below, without the Islands.

July 31, 1742.

Moderate Gales and fair Weather, Tide flowed 12 Foot 6 Inches. At 6 A. M. employed filling Water. At 8 ditto, Winds variable from N. W. to S. S. E. and small Rain. At 2 A. M. got our stream Anchor on Board. At 4 ditto got it out a Head to heave the Ship out of the Cove. At 8 ditto hove thaught, all our Moorings a fresh Gale right into the Cove, which brought much Ice in out of the *Welcome*, many large Pieces driving up and down with the Tide.

August 1, 1742.

Fresh Gales with much Rain, Wind variable from S. to N. N. W. At 5 P. M. I came on Board with

with the Boat and 7 Deer, having been 12 Leagues up the River above *Deer Sound*. At 4 *A. M.* moderate Gales and fair, unmoor'd and warp'd out of the Cove into *Savage Sound*. At Noon fresh Gales and Cloudy.

August 2, 1742.

The first Part fresh Gales and Cloudy. Continue warping out of the Cove. At 4 *P. M.* came to with our best Bower Anchor in *Savage Sound*, 2 Miles without the Cove in 20 Fathom Water clear sandy Ground; the middle and latter Part fresh Gales with much Rain: Sent the 6 Oar'd Boat with 7 Hands to help the Tender out of the Cove, much Ice driving up and down the River with the Tide. At 3 *A. M.* the Captain went down the River to observe if it was any thing clear of Ice below, and the *Welcome*, that we might get out the first fair Wind.

August 3, 1742.

The first part, fresh Gales and hazy, with Rain; the middle part moderate Gales and fair Weather. At 4 *P. M.* the Captain returned with the Boat, and found the Ice pretty clear without, some driving in the River, and there is no anchoring in the River below where we lye, and very strong Tides. Now the Spring Tide coming on; the latter part, little Winds and variable. At 8 *A. M.* got up the new Sails to dry; at Noon made Signal to unmoor.

August 4, 1742.

Little Wind, and hazy. At $\frac{1}{2}$ past 12, unmoor'd, got under Sail, running down the River against the Tide of Flood, rowing with the Ships Oars, and the Boat towing a-head. At 6 Ditto, got a-breast of
the

on board his Majesty's Ship Furnace, &c. 81

the lower Islands, the Tender in Company; a very strong Tide sets us at the rate of 5 Miles an Hour. At 12 Ditto, the River's Mouth bore N. W. by W. Four Leagues Ditto, fell in with a Ledge of Ice, got in our Boats. Ditto, Soundings 30 to 36 Fathoms. The Eastmost Land on the North Side in Sight N. N. E. 6 Leagues. Nearest ditto N. N. W. 4 or 5 Leagues. The Entrance of the River N. W. by W. 5 or 6 Leagues. Cape Dobbs, W. S. W. 9 Leagues. Sounded from 20 to 47 Fathoms. † We several times tried the Tides, and find the Flood to come from E. and E. by N. near the Middle of the Straits; and an E. Moon makes full Sea, or high Water, as well as in the River's Mouth, working to the Eastward to meet the Flood. The Straits is about 13 Leagues from Side to Side. Ditto, saw several Ledges of Ice, but none of them in our Way.

August 5, 1742.

Moderate Gales and fair Weather. At 4 P. M. Tack't. Soundings from 34 to 40 Fathom. At 6 Ditto, the Northernmost Point on the North Shore in Sight, bore N. E. by E. distance 9 Leagues. At 8 Ditto, the Easternmost Point of the South Shore, E. by S. Southernmost upon Ditto, S. W. by S. nearest Distance 3 Leagues. The Mouth of *Wager River* at 10 N. W. Ditto, set the Main-sail, sounded 44 Fathoms. At 10 A. M. saw much Ice to the Northward of us; the North Land N. W. distance 3 Leagues, sounded 36 to 40 Fathom. At 12 o'Clock, sailing among Ice, 39 Fathom, hard, rocky Ground, the Easternmost Point on the South Side, bore N. E. by E. on the Northernmost Point

† Here he again contradicts his Answer to Query 6, before the Lords of the Admiralty, in which he says, he was carried to the Southwestward nigh the Rocks on the South Shore of *Cape Dobbs* by the Tide of Ebb.

on the North Side in Sight, N. $\frac{1}{2}$ E. South of us is a low stony Beach. To the Eastward of the said Beach, the Land that appears now in Sight is very high Mountains and rugged Hills, somewhat like *Hudson's Straits*. This Strait now, is not above 8 or 9 Leagues broad. The Tide runs very strong with Eddies and Whirlings. The Ship will hardly steer. || The Flood comes from the E. by N. by Compass. In the Channel tolerable good Soundings.

August 6, 1742.

Moderate Gales and hazy. Lay too from 12 till 1. Try'd the Tide, found the Flood to come from E. by S. Sounded 45 Fathoms. The End or Point of the Beach, S. S. E. distance 4 or 5 Miles. At $\frac{1}{2}$ past 2 P. M. I went with our six-oar'd Boat on Shore, to try what time of the Tide it was; found it had ebb'd 2 Foot, and the Flood came from the Eastward. At 3 they made a Signal for the Boat, and I return'd a-board. At 4, made Sail the North Land on the North Shore in Sight N. $\frac{1}{2}$ W. the Easternmost on the East *ditto*, E. N. E. At 6 *ditto*, tack'd, standing a-cross the Channel; sounded 44 to 48 Fathoms stony Ground; the high Land in Sight, joining to the low Beach, S. by W. distance 6 Leagues. Cape *Hope* N. by E. $\frac{1}{2}$ E. distance 5 Leagues, working to Windward amongst loose Ice, sounded from 48 to 32. At 12 *ditto*, Cape *Hope*, bore N. W. by W. amongst much Ice; very often oblig'd to tack for it, sounding from 32 to 68 Fathom. This Cape *Hope*, or head Land, on the West or North Shore, bore from us N. W. by W. the Land drawing away from the East by N. to the N. by W. making 8 Points of the Compass Difference, gave us great Joy in hopes of

|| Mr. *Dobbs's* S. W. Tide is again contradicted.

its being the extream Point of *America*; this we nam'd the *Cape Hope*. We work'd up round much straggling Ice all Night; in the Morning when the Sun clear'd up the Haze, to our great Disappointment, we saw the Land low, quite round the lower Beach, round to the Westward of the North, and makes a deep Bay; and our Hopes of a Passage that way was all over. But to make sure, we kept on our Course to the Cod of it, until 2 P. M. that we could not go above 6 or 8 Miles farther that Way, we tried the Tide, and found none at all.

Here I must remark the Lieutenant's Contradiction; he says in my Journal as in others: Lay too from 12 to 1 for the Tender. Try'd the Tide, found the Flood to come from the E. by S. founded 45 Fathom. The End or Point of the Beach, bore S. S. E. distance 4 or 5 Miles. At $\frac{1}{2}$ past 2 P. M. I went with our six-oar'd Boat on Shore, to try what time of the Tide it was; found it had ebb'd two Foot; the Flood came from the Eastward. At 3 made a Signal for the Boat, and I returned on Board. At 4 made Sail. Here is a manifest Contradiction, for it could not ebb and flow at the same Time.

But it is no wonder the Lieutenant should mistake Ebb for Flood, when he is so mistaken in Point of Time, as to put down his Observations at the farthermost Part that he was at up *Wager River* 5 Days before he got thither, as may be seen by the Transaction in his Journal of *July 24.* by comparing it with his and the Master's joint Report, *Aug. 1, 1742.* in his Appendix to these Sheets. However, tho' he is mistaken in point of Time, the Transaction confirms his first Report to be genuine, tho' in this different from the second Report to Mr. *Dobbs*: For here is no spacious Strait to the Southward of the W. or W. S. W. or more southerly by Compass; nor any Flood Tide coming from the W. N.

84 *Remarkable Observations, &c.*

W. or W. S. W. but at that time he had not the Advantage of Mr. *Dobbs's* Instructions.

August 7, 1742.

Little Winds, and fair Weather. Sounded 70 Fathom. At 2 P. M. tack'd in the Cod of the Bay. It bore N. by W. distance 3 Leagues. A-cross from Side to Side, 6 or 7 Leagues very high Land. At 4 ditto, Cape *Hope* bore S. W. by Compass, distant 7 or 8 Leagues, sounded 74 Fathoms. Sailing among the straggling Ice, sounded 78. to 105 Fathoms. At 4 A. M. Cape *Hope* bore N. N. E. distance 5 Leagues in 55 Fathoms Water. At 5 ditto tack'd for the Tender, saw very much Ice to the Eastward of us. At 8 tack'd, Cape *Hope* bore N. by W. $\frac{1}{2}$ W. Distance 6 Leagues, the low Beach S. W. Distance 4 or 5 Leagues in 55 Fathoms Water. At 10 ditto the Captain went ashore to try if he could find where the Flood came from, he had the Carpenter, Gunner and Clerk with him. At 11 lay too for the Boat, in first Reef, both Topsails.

August 8, 1742.

Moderate Gales and fair Weather, lying too for the Boat up, S. off S. W. At 12 P. M. made fail and stood in. At 3 ditto Cape *Hope* bore N. $\frac{1}{2}$ E. distance 6 Leagues. The low Beach S. W. $\frac{1}{2}$ W. the Middle of the *Frozen Straits* E. S. E. distance 3 Leagues, sounded from 33 to 27 Fathoms; fresh Gales and Cloudy standing in for the Boat, sounded 60 Fathoms. At 6 ditto tack'd. At $\frac{1}{2}$ past 6 lay too. At 8 Cape *Hope* N. $\frac{1}{2}$ E. the Low Beach or Point W. S. W. Distance 4 or 5 Leagues. At $\frac{1}{2}$ past 9 the Captain came on board with the Boat continued lying too, fresh Gales and hazy with much Ice all round us. He gives an Account that he was 15 Miles in Land with the Gunner, Carpenter, Clerk
and

and Indian with him, went over high Mountains until he came to the farthest that over-looked the *Frozen Straits* and the East Bay, on the other Side, and could see the Passage where the Flood came in. The nearest Part of this Strait is 4 or 5 Leagues and 5, 6 or 7 Leagues in the broadest, many large and small Islands in the said Straits, almost full in Length about 16 or 18 Leagues it stretches S. E. round to S. and to the Westward they could see the said Straits from the Beginning to the Ending, all full of Ice not yet broke up, all fast to both Shores and the small Islands. They saw high Land about 15 or 20 Leagues to the Southward of where they stood, he took it to run towards *Cape Comfort* that *Boilett* nam'd, the farthest he went. And the Bay between this and my Lord *Worston's* Portland, that *Fox* named is Part of *Hudson's* North Bay about N. W. from *Walsingham*. Our Longitude made with *Fox* and *Boilett*. As this last-mentioned Bay and Strait is all full of fast Ice, and not likely to be thawed this Year, and if cleared must be so very late, that there will be no Time to make any Discovery: So it was resolv'd in Council to try the other Side of the *Welcome* from *Cape Dobbs* to *Brook Cobham*, if we might happily find an Opening there, and then return to *England*. At 2 A. M. bore away, fired a Gun for the Tender. At 3 ditto sounded 35 Fathoms distant from the Beach one Mile, *Cape Hope* bore N. E. by N. Distance 6 Leagues, the Beach-Point S. E. by E. Distance 9 Miles, fresh Gales and hazy. At $\frac{1}{2}$ past 9 ditto lay too for the Tender, much Ice on the West Shore near $\frac{1}{2}$ over. At 12 up S. by W. off S. W. by W. the nearest Distance from the North Shore 8 or 9 Leagues, sounded 33 Fathoms.

August 9, 1742.

Fresh Gales and hazy. At $\frac{1}{2}$ past 12 bore away. Ditto made sail. At 2 P. M. the Mouth of the River Wager bore N. W. $\frac{1}{4}$ N. Distance 8 or 9 Leagues. At 4 ditto Cape Dobbs bore N. W. $\frac{1}{4}$ W. distance 6 Leagues. Sounded 60 to 65 Fathoms. At 2 A. M. sounded 50 to 56 Fathoms. At 3 ditto altered the Course, sounded 43 to 25 Fathoms 5 Leagues off the North Shore. At 6 ditto squally, lay too for moderate Weather, up, S. E. off S. S. E. sounded 66 to 70 Fathoms; Rocks and Stones. At Noon sounded 70 to 85, the Land on the South Side in sight. From E. by S. to S. it's about 16 or 18 Leagues broad.

August 10, 1742.

Fresh Gales and hazy, lying too up S. E. off S. S. E. sounded 35 Fathoms. At 2 P. M. wore Ship and laid her Head to Northward. At 4 ditto up N. N. W. off N. W. sounded 43 to 45 Fathoms, the extreme Part of the South Shore in sight from S. to S. E. by E. Distance 6 or 7 Leagues. At 7 made sail more moderate and stood in for the North Shore. At 8 saw the said Shore and also the South, ditto at the same time sounded 60 Fathoms muddy Ground. At 10 ditto standing over for the North Shore sounded 45 to 47 Fathoms, ditto brought too. At 12 ditto up N. N. E. off N. by W. her Head to the North, sounded 45 to 43. At 2 A. M. up N. by E. off N. W. by N. sounded 47 to 45 Fathoms. At 4 ditto wore Ship and saw the North Shore from N. E. to N. N. W. nearest Distance 4 or 5 Leagues, sounded 45 to 35. At 5 ditto made sail. At 8 ditto fresh Gales

on board his Majesty's Ship Furnace, &c. 87

Gales and hazy. Sounded 36 to 40 Fathoms || keeping as near the North Shore as we could to see if there was any Opening or Passage in the Land. Sounded 24 to 29 Fathoms stony Ground. At Noon out first Reef of both the Top-sails, sounded 25 to 35 Fathoms.

August 11, 1742.

Moderate Gales and hazy, continue sailing in sight of the Main-Land of the North Shore quite from Cape Hope, hauled off to deepen Water, sounded 34 to 28 Fathoms. At 8 ditto sounded 29 to 40 Fathoms, ditto double Reef both Top-sails, ditto brought too, up S. and by E off S. S. W. sounded 52 Fathoms. At 4 A. M. sounded 42 to 65. ditto made sail: At 6 stood in with the Head-land distance 9 or 10 Leagues to the East of Brook Cobham. Bore N. W. by N. Distance 6 Leagues. Sounded 60 to 49 Fathoms. At 7 ditto set Foresail, sounded 60 to 50 Fathoms standing in for this Head-land 2 Leagues Distance, saw several black Whales in the shoal Water, a playing. At Noon hauld off from the Head-land to deepen our Water, sounded 20 Fathoms; ditto saw the Island of Brook Cobham. Bore W. by S. Distance 8 or 9 Leagues, 4 Leagues Distance off Shore we § kept along Shore all the way from the Frozen Straits, and find it to be a Main. So many small Islands and deep Bays, this Head-land and the other in 64° makes a deep Bay. In the Passage out, we did not see the Bottom of it, as we now have by keeping close in Shore.

|| This contradicts his Answer to Query 12 (in p. 179 of my *Vindication*) to the Lords of the Admiralty, in which he says, he acknowledges that he could never properly distinguish the Headlands in our Return from Cape Frigid to Brook Cobham, and did not come nearer to the West Shore than 5 or 6 Leagues, neither searched Inlets nor Bays, nor came near enough any Land to the Westward to distinguish it till we came to Brook Cobham.

§ Here again he contradicts the 12th Query before the Lords of the Admiralty.

August 12, 1742.

Moderate Weather, founded 39 to 20 and to 45 Fathoms. At 4 P. M. the South End of Brook Cobham bore W. N. W. Distance 4 Leagues. At 8 ditto tack'd, tryed the Tide. It came from * East, founded 38 to 25 Fathoms; ditto brought too until Day-light. Up E. and by N. off E. by S. founded 35 to 39 Fathoms. At 2 A. M. up E. by N. off E. S. E. At 3 ditto, I went away with the 6 oared Boat to Brook Cobham to try the Tides there and the two Indians with me. At 4 ditto made sail working towards the Island. Sounded 43 to 50 Fathoms, I found this Island to be all of a white hard Marble Stone, it is about 3 Leagues from the Main, it lyeth N. W. by W. and S. E. by E. by Compass about 7 Leagues in Length and 3 broad.

August 13, 1742.

Little Winds and fair Weather, working up towards the Island, founded 23 to 15 Fathoms. At 2 P. M. tack'd, ditto the Body of the Island bore E. N. E. Distance 7 Miles, founded 15 Fathoms Water. At 6 ditto almost calm, came to with our small Bower Anchor in 24 Fathoms Water to stop the Tide for the Boat; the *Discovery* by us fired a Gun every half Hour for the Boat. At 1 A. M. I returned on board with the Boat; I had not above two Hours Time ashore that I could neither see high nor low Water; we found good fresh Water upon the Island, also killed a white Bear and Deer, and brought them on Board with me. At 5 A. M. sent the Master in the six-oar'd Boat ashore for Water, employed in cleaning the Gun Deck. At Noon made Signal for the Boat,

* This contradicts his W. N. W. Tide at Brook Cobham.

August

August 14, 1742.

Moderate Gales and variable. At 4 P. M. the Boat returned with Water. At 5 ditto sent her for more. At 8 ditto fired a Gun for the Boat every half Hour it being hazy. At 2 A. M. she returned. At 4 ditto sent her away for more; and the two Northern Indians with the small Boat we had from the *Discovery*, got at *Churchill* for them to get from the said Island to their own Country or to the Main Land the first fine Weather, loaded with Powder, Shot, Hatchets, Tobacco and some thing of every thing the Captain had of Toys and Provisions for some Time.

August 15, 1742.

The first Part little Winds and variable. At 4 P. M. weighed and made Signal for the Boat, ditto some small Rain; at 7 the Boat returned with Water, ditto got the Water and Boat in at 8, ditto bore away for *England*. At 10 ditto the Body of *Brook Cobham* bore N. E. and by N. Distance 15 or 16 Miles, sounded 55 Fathoms, the Middle and Latter Part fresh Gales with hazy and much Rain, sounded 60 to 70 Fathoms. At 10 A. M. in first Reef of both Topsails. At Noon sounded 75 Fathoms when the Boat returned as above, they gave an Account that it flowed W. or W. by N. Moon makes High Water and flows about 22 Foot on the highest Tides by the Marks on the Shore. Left the 2 Northern Indians on the Island of *Brook Cobham* to make the best of their Way the first Opportunity with the small Boat we gave them; the Indian that was Linguist desired to see *England* with us, came off in the Boat again.

The

The Affidavit of *Obediah Satchell*.

London }
to wit, }

May, 14, 1744,

O *Obediah Satchell* of the Parish of *St. Mary Overy*, in the Borough of *Southwark* in the County of *Surry*, Mariner,

Maketh Oath, that he was one of the Mariners belonging to his Majesty's Ship the *Furnace*, under the Command of Capt. *Christopher Middleton*, when sent out to discover a Passage to the Western *American Ocean* by *Hudson's Bay*; that he made the said Voyage under, and returned to *England* with the said Captain, as far as the Deponent can judge by his the said Captain's Behaviour, did not neglect or conceal the Discovery of a Passage as aforesaid, but that he used his utmost Endeavours to discover such Passage.

This Deponent farther maketh Oath, that he had read the Queries to, and Answers of, *Donalson, Iver-son, Monro* and *Gill*, printed in the Appendix to the Captain's Reply or Answer to Mr. *Dobbs's* Remarks, and contained in the Pages 43 to 51 inclusive in the said Reply or Answer; tho' the same is not yet published, and in the most solemn Manner doth aver that the chief Particulars of the said Answers, to the best of this Deponent's Remembrance, are Truth; he cannot answer for such other Matters as did not come under his Knowledge either by being present, or by the joint Reports of such as were present at any Transaction or Incident. In particular this Deponent doth affirm that the Answer to Query 7 is, to his Knowledge true; and in Confirmation to Query 8; he this Deponent maketh Oath, that he

has

has heard the Lieutenant and the greater Part of the Ships Company rejoice, at the Prospect of returning to *England*, and that several apprehended they never should get back.

This Deponent farther maketh oath, that during the whole Voyage he never heard of any Neglect, Rumours or Murmurs on that Account, or that any ever said the Captain concealed the Passage: On the contrary, this Deponent has heard many of the Men declare their Fears of our finding one, which would oblig^d us to stay out another Winter.

Farther this Deponent maketh oath, that he has heard *Richard Guy* declare, during the Voyage, the greater Part of what is contained in his Affidavit p. 30 and *seq.* Appendix to the Reply to Mr. *Dobbs's* Remarks, and of his own Knowledge, this Deponent affirms the Captain took care to instruct all who were willing to be instructed, and that the Captain had not above 4 or 5 Men in a Watch able to go aloft to hand or reef, and had the Assistance of Men from the *Discovery*, while in *Wager River*.

This Deponent farther maketh oath that he was one of the Boat's Crew, when the Capt. went ashore at *Cape Frigid* or the *Frozen Straits*, between 9 and 10 in the Morning the 7th of *August*, as appears by the Logg-book, and landed about 11, and then the Water had fallen or ebb'd about 6 Foot by the Shore where we landed, to wait for the Captain, while he went to make Observations: The Place where we landed, and the Boat lay, was a sandy Bay with Islands and Ice aground, so that no Current of Tide could be perceived to run on either Flood or Ebb, but the Water only to rise or fall; when the Captain, Clerk and Indian came down, between 4 and 5 o'Clock, to the best of this Deponent's Remembrance, he this Deponent met the said Captain and Clerk and Indian under the Rocks,
and

and the Captain asked this Deponent whether it was Flood or Ebb? and he the Deponent answered it was Flood; upon which Answer, the Captain again asked the Deponent how he knew? and the Deponent reply'd, the Boat had been grounded fore and aft, and was then, or would be afloat by the time he got to her, he being then about a $\frac{1}{4}$ of a Mile distant, which when he this Deponent and the Captain got to the Boat proved true, and by the Ice which was grounded, we found it had flowed about 4 Foot, and had 12 Foot to flow, which was confirmed by observing with a Pole and a Level; consequently the Tide there flowed 16 Foot.

This Deponent farther maketh Oath, that the Captain stood on the Gang-way to talk to the Lieutenant, and that he heard the said Captain, when in the Boat, wish the Lieutenant might observe his Order, or he would be drawn into the Opening by the Tide of Ebb (since called the *Frozen Straits*).

Farther this Deponent maketh Oath, that he was in the Boat when the Lieutenant went on Shore at *Brook Cobham*, and that having landed the said Officer; this Deponent with the rest of the Boat's Crew went in pursuit of a Bear in the Water about half a Mile distant to the Westward of the Cove, which Bear was killed by one of the Indians, and we took it in tow, but had much ado to pull up again to the Cove, the Tide of Flood coming so strong from the Eastward between the main Island and the small Island which lies off the Mouth of the Cove. Farther this Deponent on his Oath sayeth, that the Lieutenant, to the best of his Remembrance, was not much above one Hour on Shore, and that it was between 6 or 7 o'Clock in the Evening when they went in pursuit of the said Bear, and that *Alexander Morrison*, upon their Return, when they had got close to the Shore jumped over board to assist in getting the Bear
into

into the Boat, and was to the best of this Deponent's Remembrance, the only Man who was up to his Waist in the Water, and might have been in a few Steps more (as this Deponent believes) over his Head, as the Rocks were almost steep too. This Deponent farther maketh Oath, that he well remembers that Capt. *Middleton* pulled out his Watch when we landed at *Cape Frigid*, and said it was eleven o'Clock, as also when he came down to the Boat the same Day at the same Cape, and said it was half an Hour past four.

Obediah Satchell.

Sworn at Grocers - Hall,
London, the 15th of
May, 1744, before me
ROBERT WESTLEY,
Mayor.

N. B. Their

N. B. Their Lordships of the Admiralty having favoured me with Leave to take a Copy of Mr. *Moor's* Journal, I find such Difference between it and his first Mate's (though the Transactions of the one were copied from the other, as they have both acknowledged) that I have thence very just Ground to apprehend the Journal now in the Office not to be genuine; and if their Lordships would be so favourable to cut through this Gordian Knot of Iniquity, by their Order, to stop the said *Moor's* Pay till he produces his *Original Journal* in the Hand Writing of *Grance Grant*, which is mentioned in the Appendix of my *Vindication*, p. 146; for if one Forgery is proved, it must put an End to all future Altercations, as well as convince the World what Credit ought to be given to my Antagonist and his Witnesses.

E R R A T A.

In the VINDICATION.

PAge 24, line 14, for *these three hundred*, read *this hundred*.
P. 29, l. 31, for *about 8 and 9*, read *between 8 and 9*.
P. 43, l. 31, for *Hudson's Straits*, read *Hudson's Bay*. P. 43,
l. 37, for *got out at Churchill River*, read *got out of Churchill
River*. P. 44, l. 11, for *got into Bay*, read *got into the Bay*.
P. 61, l. 17, for *sending off the Ice*, read *sending off the Ice*.

In the SUMMARY STATE.

Answer to Reason I. p. 68, l. 4, for *Ferries*, read *Fewers*.
The same in Answer II. for *Ferries*, read *Fewers*.

APPENDIX to ditto.

P. 111, l. 2, for *98 Fathom*, read *68 Fathoms*. P. 116, l. 37,
for *Tides lacked*, read *Tide slacked*. P. 120, l. 30, for *one of*,
read *known if*. P. 124, l. 12, for *from at Churchill*, read *as
at Churchill*.

LOGG JOURNAL.

At the Bottom of p. 1, for *5:15'*, read *S. 5:15' W.* At
the Bottom of p. 10, for *N. by E.* read *N. E. by E.* P. 12, l. 1,
for *without Poles*, read *and setting with Ice Poles*. P. 12, against
12 at Noon, for *S. W. by S.* read *S. W. by W.* P. 12, l. 2,
for *under Log bore from us 8 or 9 Leagues*, read *bore from us
S. W. by W. 8 or 9 Leagues*. P. 12, against 12 at Noon, for
S. W. by S. read *S. W. by W.* P. 16, for *Lat. 65:36*, read
65:30. P. 34, against 4 in the Morning, for *Cape Dobbs
bearing W. N. W.* read *W. S. W.* In the same p. 34, the last
line, against 12 at Noon, for *S. E. by S.* read *S. E. by E.* near-
est distance 4 Leagues. P. 35, l. 3, in Transactions, for *S. W.*
 $\frac{1}{2}$ *W.* read *S. S. W. $\frac{1}{2}$ W.* P. 35, last line at the Bottom, for
S. side on ditto, half a Mile distant, read, *especially on the S. side,*
where you have 25 Fathoms, half a Mile from the Shore. P. 39,
for *observed Lat. 65:10*, read *64:10*. P. 42, l. 2, at the
Bottom, for *Lat. 63:20*, read *63:00*.

In

E R R A T A.

In my REPLY to Mr. *Dobbs's* REMARKS.

Page 2, line 26, for *express'd*, read *express*. P. 12, l. 30, for *with*, read *to*. P. 14, l. 34, for *that*, read *upon*. P. 28, l. 9, for *Indian*, read *Indians*. P. 39, l. 12, for *Flower*, read *Flowers*. P. 39, l. 31, for *Answer Thompson's*, read *Answer*; Thompson. P. 42, l. 27, for *me*, read *as*. P. 48, l. 30, for *and, and*, read *and Whales*. P. 50, l. 17, for *transcribing*, read *and, and*, read *and Whales*. P. 50, l. 17, for *transcribing*, read *transcribing*. P. 55, l. 24, for *lain*, read *fain*. P. 59, l. 18, for *upon his*, read *the close of his*. P. 61, l. 25, for *it*, read *if*. P. 61, l. 31, for *but*, read *and 50 per Cent.* P. 64, l. 20, for *to cut*, read *to be cut*. P. 64, l. 27, for *Spot*, read *Spot*. P. 65, l. 8, for *that is*, read *the only*. P. 67, l. 36, for *Pbaragraph*, read *Paragraph*. P. 83, l. 28, for *Inferences*, read *Inferences*. P. 84, l. 15, for *Observations*, read *Observations*; The same page and line, for *Degree*, read *Degree*; P. 86, l. 19, for *up*, read *up*; P. 88, l. 7, for *except*, read *expect*. P. 92, l. 20, for *Language*, read *Language*; The same page and line, for *Romance*, read *Romance*; P. 95, the last line, for *he has*, read *thou*. P. 97, l. 7, for *Letter*, read *latter*. P. 97, l. 36, for *and has*, read *and seemingly has*. P. 98, l. 11, for *Captain not*, read *Captain, and were induced not*. P. 98, l. 16, for *Reputation and*, read *Reputation, and were therefore loath*. P. 98, l. 27, for *my*, read *my*; P. 104, l. 3, for *pin'd*, read *pin'd*. P. 107, l. 11, for *Fox who found*, read *Fox found*. P. 107, l. 24, for *Mistake*, read *Mistake*; In the same page and line, for *higb*, read *high*; P. 108, l. 27, for *rurturned*, read *returned*. P. 113, l. 1, for *that*, read *I gave*. P. 113, l. 29, for *strait*, read *strict*. P. 125, l. 25, for *Mr. Moore's*, read *the Lieutenant's*. P. 127, l. 21, for *suspended*, read *superceded*. P. 128, l. 1, for *Roguary*, read *Roguary*. P. 128, l. 11, for *loth*, read *unwilling*. The same page and line, for *the*, read *their*. P. 128, l. 24, for *he*, read *they*; and for *his*, read *their*. P. 129, l. 8, for *both as*, read *both as to their Commission, and as*. P. 129, l. 19, for *me for its*, read *me not*. P. 129, l. 20, for *bear*, read *bear*; P. 137, l. 6, for *as I was*, read *I was*. P. 138, l. 8, for *the Lieutenant's*, read *the Lieutenant's at*. P. 142, l. 32, for *about 3 or 4*, read *above 3 or 4*. P. 143, l. 35, for *Endearvous*, read *Eudeavour's*. P. 153, l. 21, for *few sick*, read *few beside*. P. 160, l. 13, for *Furnace*, read *Discovery Pink*. P. 138, l. 7, for *the Journal*, read *his Journal*. P. 81, l. 25, for *after*, read *before*. P. 73, in the Journal, l. 4, from the Bottom, for *Southward*, read *South-westward*.


 A
 A
 Allai
 C
 Anfo
 W
 Appe
 P.
 Atter
 p.
 Asser
 p.
 Accou
 son
 Asser
 p.
 Accou
 Lic
 Affid
 31
 Affid
 in

 Briber
 Boats
 dia
 Boasts
 son,



A N

ALPHABETICAL INDEX.

ACCUSATIONS, dif-
ferent Heads, page 7.
Allan (Mr.) employed to find
Capt. *Middleton*, p. 9.
Answer to the Collection of
Water fallacious, p. 34.
Appeal to Journals, &c.
p. 35.
Attempt on Master *Wilson*,
p. 39.
Affertion of *John Butler*,
p. 56.
Account, ridiculous, of *Hud-*
son's Straits, p. 67.
Affertion demonstrated false,
p. 80, 81.
Account, additional, from the
Lieutenant, p. 86.
Affidavit of *Guy*, Ap. p. 30,
31, 32, 33, 34, inclusive.
Affidavit of *Obediah Satchel*,
in the *Appendix*, p. 90.

B.

Bribery, p. 14.
Boats of the *Esquimaux In-*
dians, p. 21.
Boasts of *Wygate* and *Thomp-*
son, p. 98, 99.

Blunders of Mr. *Moore*,
p. 123.

C.

Coast searched, as resolved
in Council, p. 11.
Concealments not candid, p.
20.
Corruption, a near Resem-
blance of, p. 40.
Council Evidence of the 8th
of Aug. p. 41.
Contradiction, p. 59.
Cruelty of C. M. answered,
p. 60, 61.
Concealment unfair, p. 105.
Contradiction in Lieutenant's
Reports, Ap. p. 19, 21,
23, 24, 26, 27.

D.

Dobbs (Mr.) seeks Capt.
Middleton's Acquaintance,
p. 1, 9, part of 10 inclu-
sive.
Dobbs (Mr.) his Character
of the Witnesses for
C. M. p. 16.

Dream

I N D E X.

- Dream of Mr. Dobbs*, p. 34.
Discovery quitted, p. 44.
Draught, the Gunner allows double Passage for Whales and Tides, p. 48.
Dobbs (Mr.) writes upon *Hearfay*, p. 49.
 — guilty of an unfair *Insertion*, p. 51. He confounds *Hearfay* and *Observation*, p. 52. He lays great Stress on a Particle, *ib.* He is not a good Pilot for *Hudson's-Bay*, 58.
Disingenuity of Mr. Dobbs, p. 64, 65.
Dobbs (Mr.) a little historical, p. 82.
Diffidence of the Lieutenant in his own Judgment, p. 89.
Dobbs (Mr.) *Disingenuity* in beginning his printed Log, p. 95.
- E.
- Esquimaux Indians* never lose Sight of Land, p. 21.
Ellis (Mr.) falsely quoted, p. 30.
Evasion Jesuitical, p. 53.
Evidence of Wygate and Thompson, *hearfay*, p. 55.
Evasion, a mean one, p. 84.
Earnestness of Mr. Dobbs for the *Discovery*, p. 97.
Evidence of Mr. Moor as to the *Brackishness of the Water at Wager River*, p. 120.
 — to crossing ditto, *ib.*
- F.
- Frost* (Mr.) who, p. 29.
Facts, a plain Narrative of, p. 40.
Falsity asserted, p. 81.
Foundation of Mr. Dobbs's Proofs, p. 83.
Table, p. 84.
Falsity, glaring, advanced by *Mr. Moor*, p. 119, 120.
- G.
- Gunner* contradicts what he had signed, p. 48.
 — his *Draught* in favour of *C. M.* *ib.*
Goods first discovered at the *Orkneys*, p. 78.
 — the *Quantity*, p. 79.
- H.
- Hudson's - Bay Company* would prevent a *Discovery*, p. 53.
- I.
- Inconsistency of Mr. Dobbs*, p. 27.

Industry

Ind
Ins
Inf
a
Ind
Inv
o
Inst
Ign
t
Imp
c
Insin
p
Ice
L
r
Imp
Jour
M
p
Jour
tr
8

Len
M
p
Let
G

p
Lex
p
Lic
Ev
Log
pe

I N D E X.

- Industry of Thompson and Wygate*, p. 39.
- Instructions*, p. 47.
- Insertion*, unfair, of *C. M.* answered, p. 57.
- Industry of Mr. Dobbs*,
- Invoice of Goods worm'd out of C. M.* 77, 78.
- Instructions*, general, p. 80.
- Ignorance and Malice betrayed*, p. 81.
- Impossibility a Ground of Accusation*, p. 91.
- Insinuation*, somewhat like, p. 98.
- Ice, Wager River full of*, Lieutenant's Journal, p. 121.
- Impossibility evinced*, p. 122.
- Journal*, Lieutenant's, proves *Moor* guilty of Falshood, p. 125.
- Journal*, Lieutenant's, Extract in the *Ap.* p. 65 to 89.
- L.
- Lendrick (Mr.) a Friend to Mr. Dobbs*, his Character, p. 15.
- Letter from him and Mr. Gill*, p. 16.
- from ditto material, p. 17.
- Letter from Axx the Gunner*, p. 18.
- Lieutenant contradicts his Evidence*, p. 19.
- Logg-book, Journals, &c.* appealed to, p. 35.
- Lieutenant recalled, and why*, p. 41.
- driven to the Eastward, p. 44.
- Letter anonymous, written by Clerk and Surgeon*, p. 94.
- *Mr. Dobbs's, December 23, 1735*, *Ap.* p. 1, 2.
- *Sam. Smith, May 27, 1741*, *Ap.* p. 3.
- *Hudson's-Bay Company, May 27, 1741*, *Ap.* p. 4, 5, 6.
- from ditto, *May 30, 1741*, *Ap.* p. 7.
- from *Mr. Dobbs to C. M. Octob. 20, 1742*, *Ap.* p. 9, 10, to 13, incl.
- from *Gov. Igham, Aug. 6, 1743*, *Ap.* p. 14.
- from *Mr. Gill and Lendrick, Sept. 27, 1743*, *Ap.* p. 15.
- from *Mr. Gosling, March 15, 1743-4*, *Ap.* p. 16.
- *Mr. Searles, March 30, 1744*, *Ap.* p. 17.
- *Mr. Avery's, April 20, 1744*, *Ap.* p. 18.
- from *Donalson, &c.* *Ap.* p. 42.
- M.
- Modesty*, remarkable of *Mr. Thompson*, p. 29.
- Mine, Copper*, whence the Story, p. 30.
- the Report of the *N. Indians*, ib.

Marble

I N D E X.

Marble Island, the Shores
filled with Ice, p. 66.
Mountains and Lands remov'd
by Mr. *Dobbs*, p. 87.
Middleton (Capt.) threatened
by *Wygate* and *Thompson*,
p. 99.
Moor contradicted by the
Log-book, and his own
Journal, p. 122.

N.

Norton (Mr.) p. 27.
Northern American Indians,
where settled, p. 27, 28.
Norton with ditto, how
long, p. 28.

O.

Opening near Whale Cove
and *Marble Isle*, p. 10.
Ocean, Western American,
distant from *Hudson's-*
Bay 4 or 500 Leagues,
p. 20.
Openings, none, p. 39.

P.

Press, an Error of the,
p. 19.
Procedure in the Voyage,
p. 36, 37.
Particulars from the Jour-
nals, &c. p. 43.
Partnership proposed by Mr.
Dobbs, p. 83.

Proof of Folly or Innocence
in C. M. p. 85.
Probability advanced impro-
bable, p. 86.

Q.

Queries answered by *Donal-*
son, &c. Ap. p. 43 to 51
inclusive.
— answered by *Carew*,
Ap. p. 52 to 64 inclusive.

R.

Reasons for believing Mr.
Smith Sam. Agent for Mr.
Dobbs, p. 13.
Relations, former, contra-
dicted, p. 20.
Report, Lieutenant's, alter'd,
p. 31.
— of *Norton* false, p.
37.
Reports of the Lieutenant, 3,
Ap. p. 19 to p. 23, inclus.
Report of ditto, joined with
the Master, Ap. p. 24,
25.
— *Lieutenant's*, in Mr.
Dobbs's Remarks, p. 138.
Ap. p. 26, 27.
— *Price's*, Ap. p. 28.
— *Bentley's*, Ap. p. 29.
— *Butler's*, Ap. p. 25.
Report, Dewildes's, Ap. p. 36,
37, 38, 39, 40, 41,
inclusive.

S. Smith,

Smith
to
Stupis
Sun
17
Strain
be
Ship's
con
Ship
Sig
Search
neg
Strait
P.
Ships,
the
p. 6
Suppo
Re
Strait
ima
87.
Sneer

Thomp
rac
Mr
p. 1
Transf
con
Rec
Tongue
und
29.

I N D E X.

- Tides*, N. E. by E. p. 43. ||
Truth concealed, p. 63.
Tides, &c. Mr. *Dobbs's* Witnesses no Judges of, p. 64.
Thompson's Boats, p. 68.
Tampering with Witnesses, p. 99. Acknowledged, in some measure, by Mr. *Dobbs*, p. 100.
Tide of Flood from the Eastward, p. 101.
 ----- from the Western Ocean annihilated by Mr. *Dobbs's* printed Log, p. 105.
Tide from S. W. destroyed by his own Log, and *Kelsey's* Journal, p. 105.
Tides, p. 106, 107, to 119.
Tides, a Blunder by Mr. *Dobbs* of 16 Points of the Compass, from p. 113 to 119.
Tide-table, p. 189 to 191.
Tides from the N. E. in the *Welcome*, proved by his own Letter, p. 191.

V.

- Vigilance* of C. M. proved by Mr. *Lendrick*, p. 17.
Variation foisted into a Report, p. 69, 70.

W.

- Wilson* cautioned by C. M. p. 15.
Water, three Bottles, *ib.*
Wygate's

T.

- Thompson* and *Wygate's* Characters, in a Letter from Mr. *Gill* and *Lendrick*, p. 16.
Transactions of the Voyage concealed, at C. M's Request, p. 18.
Tongue, Northern Indians, understood by whom, p. 29.

Smith, Samuel, his Proposal to C. M. p. 17.
Stupidity of the Lieutenant, Surgeon, and Clerk, p. 17.

Straits frozen asserted to be real, *ib.*

Ship's Crew in a miserable condition, *ib.*

Ship has no Effect on the Sight, p. 32.

Search of the S. W. Tide neglected, p. 35.

Straits frozen a Fiction, p. 48.

Ships, Necessity of cutting them out of the Ice, p. 64.

Supposition imposed for a Reality, p. 68, 69.

Strait, a spacious one, an imaginary Discovery, p. 87.

Sneer of Mr. *Dobbs*, p. 89.

I N D E X . I

Wygate's Character in a Letter, his Declaration, p. 16. Thompson's great Genius for the Languages, p. 29, 30. Whales from the Western American Ocean come to the North for Sea-Spiders, p. 31. Water, fresh, lighter than salt, p. 46. Wilson, Master, denying.

what he told Mr. Dobbs, p. 48. Wygate's Endeavours to impose on the public, proved, p. 56. Words falsely related, p. 88. Water proved fresh, p. 89. Wygate's boasts of Letters from Mr. Dobbs, containing Promises of Reward, p. 99.

F I N I S .



Faint, mostly illegible text at the bottom of the page, possibly bleed-through or a second list of entries.

